



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

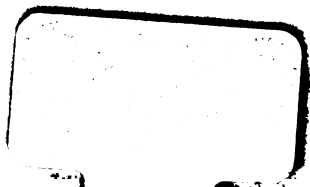
### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

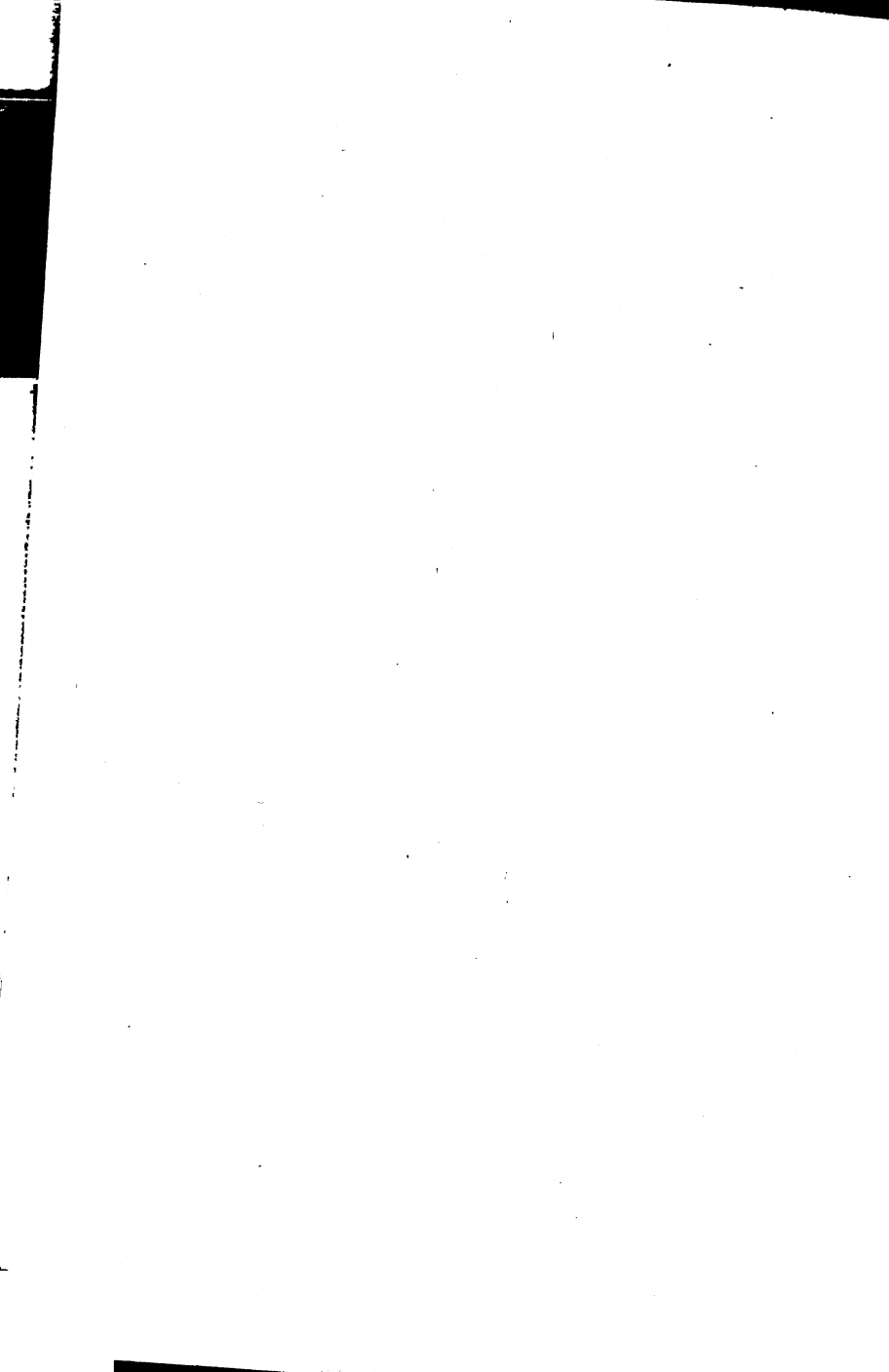
NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



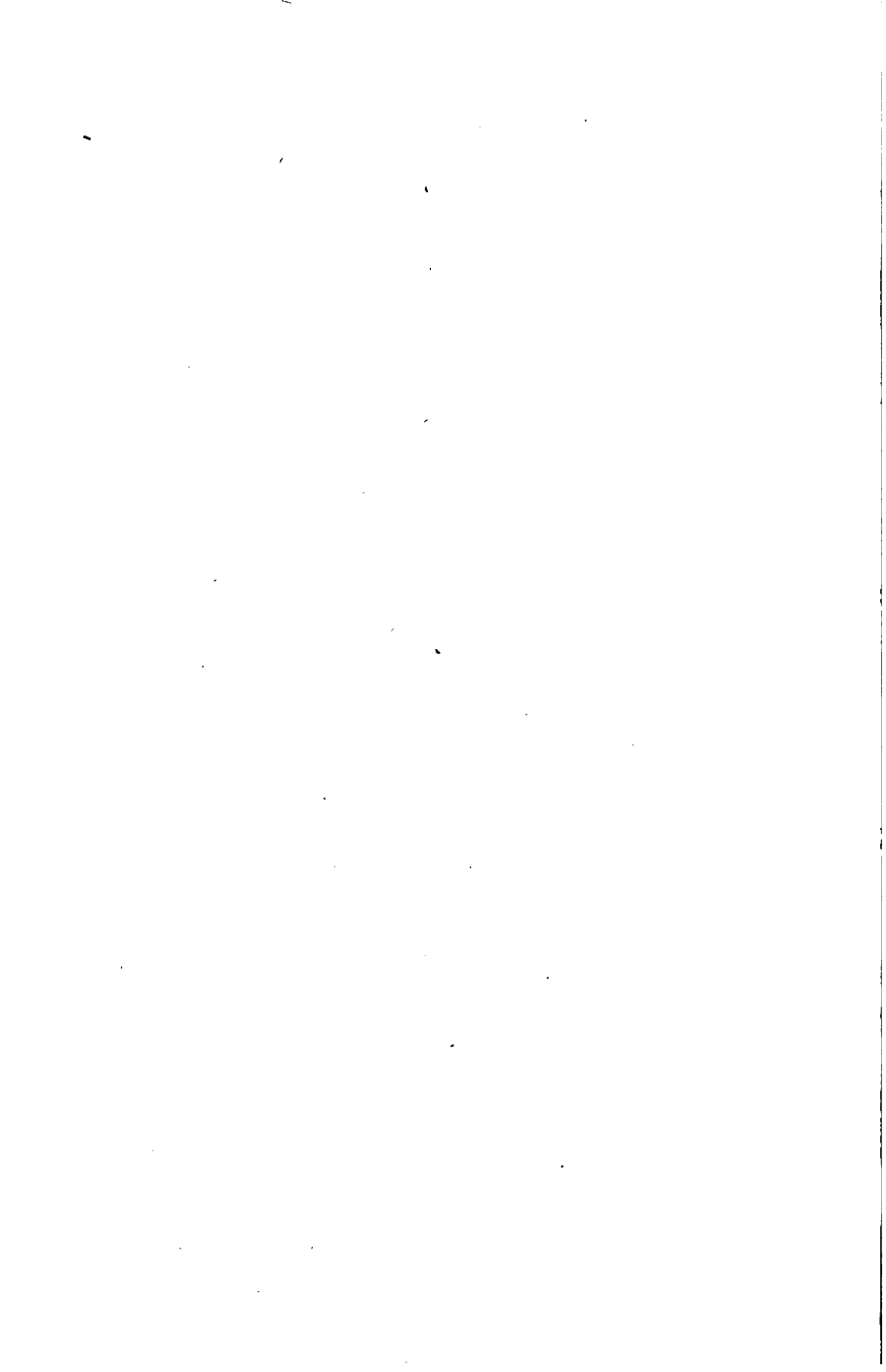
3 3433 08192140 9



I V P  
Sh...







PAIS

JAN 15 1923

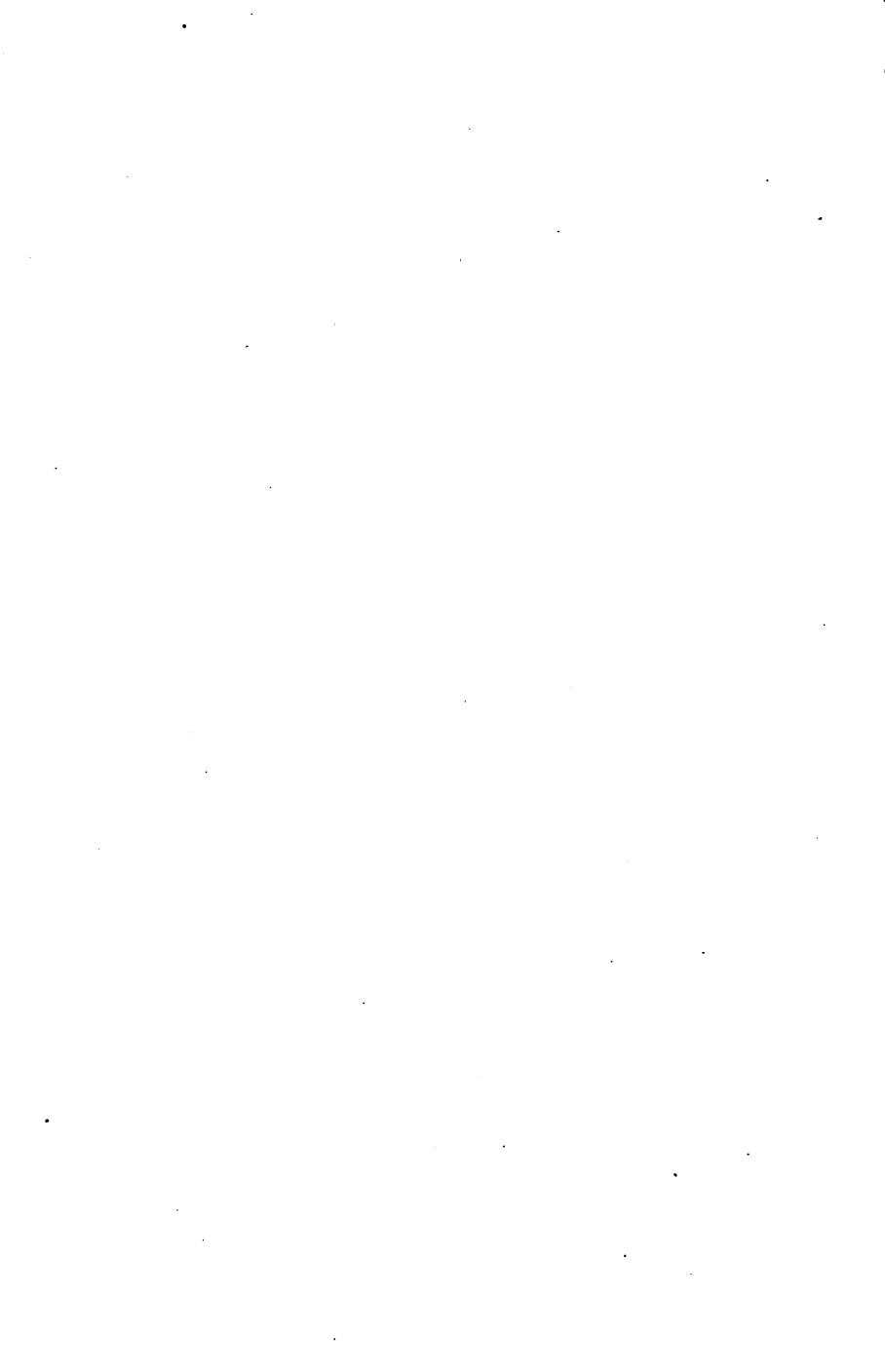
☆ P

Shawanda

192

ED





ASTOR LENOX  
TILDEN FOUNDATION  
LIBRARY



**MONUMENT ERECTED IN FRANCE BY THE STATE OF  
MISSOURI IN MEMORY OF THE SONS  
OF THE STATE**

1177 2.3  
(2)

# A History of Missouri and Missourians

6410

A Text Book for "Class A" Elementary Grade,  
Freshman High School, and Junior High School

*Those states stand highest in general renown which have  
stood highest in popularizing their true history.*

BY

FLOYD C. SHOEMAKER, A.B., A.M.

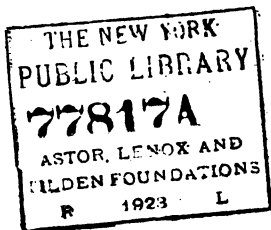
Secretary, "State Historical Society of Missouri;"  
Editor, "The Missouri Historical Review;" Author,  
"Missouri's Struggle for Statehood," "Missouri's  
Hall of Fame."



PUBLISHED BY  
THE WALTER RIDGWAY PUBLISHING COMPANY  
Columbia, Missouri

1922

M. 124



COPYRIGHT, 1922,  
BY  
FLOYD C. SHOEMAKER.

## PREFACE

No state offers a richer history than Missouri. Covering over two centuries of recorded annals, the story of her people is a resumé of the important political, social, and economic developments of our nation. In exploration Missouri was opened to Spaniard and Frenchman, in settlement to Frenchman and American, and in government she was ruled by each. Her lead deposits, fur-bearing animals, salt springs, and fertile soil attracted her first settlers. Her central geographical position made her the crossroads of trade and travel from east to west, gave her possession of the fur trade and the Santa Fe trade, and peopled her land with homeseeking settlers from south, east, and north. An American state with ninety-five per cent of her people native born, Missouri offers to her citizens advantages possessed by few.

Missouri history is rich in interest, instruction, and profit. It is more than romance, it is a study offering high reward to its followers. It is one of the bases for appreciating the value of sound patriotism. It is the greatest developer of man's chief asset—the critical faculty. It furnishes a fund of information from which knowledge grows and wisdom develops. And, finally, it profits the State itself in retaining its citizens and attracting new ones. Missourians are just awakening to the importance of this last.

The "History of Missouri and Missourians" was written in such manner as to make possible the attainment of these rewards. History largely fails when it is presented in purely chronological manner. Such history is little more than annals, and annals become tedious over a period of decades. History also fails in both interest and instruction when it is founded on any one phase of a people's development. The development of Missouri agriculture, education, mining, and transportation, is at least as important as a history of Missouri politics. The

founding and development of Missouri cities is certainly as important.

An appreciation of these facts explains the reason for the present treatment of Missouri history in this book. It is a history of Missouri and Missourians. Therefore, it is topical first and chronological second. The main emphasis is on the people's social and economic development. The political phase is not slighted but it is given only its proper proportion. The same is true of wars. Missouri's geographical position, her resources, and the character of her population, are fully dealt with in order to appreciate the activities of the people.

The advantages of the topical treatment, especially since 1820, are many. It enables the reader to get a perspective of one hundred years on any subject. Instead of a piecemeal presentation of a subject, distributed in a dozen places, the reader gets a summary review of that subject in one or two chapters. This makes possible an intelligent understanding of that subject. This method of presentation lends itself to the teacher, making Missouri history, as it should be, both readable and instructive.

The "History of Missouri and Missourians" also marks a departure in ignoring the insignificant and the notorious however spectacular. Neither is worthy of treatment in a school textbook or a supplementary reader. The truly important events in Missouri history are many. There is no need to pander to so-called interest by including minor happenings.

The purpose of this history is to tell the true story of Missouri's development and to recount her contributions to civilization. If this story is well told a new State pride should result. Such a pride, founded on facts, will enable Missourians to meet with confidence the contentions of strangers. It also will enable them to take counsel from the wisdom of their forefathers. And, it will instill in each the spirit of communion with home-land and home-folks—Missouri and Missourians.

FLOYD C. SHOEMAKER

Columbia, Missouri.

# CONTENTS

## PART I

### MISSOURI AND MISSOURIANS

	Page
Chapter I. Missouri, The Center State.....	9
Chapter II. Missourians .....	19

## PART II

### MISSOURI A FOREIGN POSSESSION, 1541-1804

#### *The Day of the Frenchman*

Chapter I. Early Spanish and French Explorers, 1541-1804 .....	27
Chapter II. First Century of Settlement, 1700-1804... ..	38
Chapter III. Missouri Under Spanish Rule, 1770-1804.. ..	47

## PART III

### MISSOURI AN AMERICAN TERRITORY, 1804-1820

*To share the duties and privileges of the greatest republic is the priceless inheritance of every American citizen*

Chapter I. The Louisiana Purchase, 1803.....	58
Chapter II. Missouri's Struggle for Statehood.....	62
Chapter III. Life of the People, 1804-1821.....	77
Chapter IV. Missourians, The Trail-makers and Traders of the West, 1804-1843.....	94

## PART IV

### A CENTURY OF MISSOURI POLITICS, 1821-1921

*Missouri is a grand old state, and deserves to be grandly governed*

Chapter I. The Rule of the Fathers, 1820-1844.....	112
--	-----



Chapter II.	Democratic Rule and Political Unrest, 1844-1860 .....	126
Chapter III.	Civil War Politics and Radical Repub- lican Rule, 1861-1870 .....	147
Chapter IV.	The Liberal Republicans and the Demo- cratic Return to Power, 1870-1904.....	175
Chapter V.	The Period of Independent Voting and Political Uncertainty, 1904-1921 .....	196

## PART V.

## A CENTURY OF MILITARY MISSOURI

Chapter I.	Early Wars—Black Hawk, Seminole, Honey, Mormon, Mexican, and Kansas Border Wars .....	208
Chapter II.	The Civil War .....	219
Chapter III.	The Spanish-American and Mexican Border Wars .....	233
Chapter IV.	The World War .....	237

## PART VI

## A CENTURY OF MISSOURI'S VICTORIES OF PEACE

*The test of a civilization is its ability to co-operate*

Chapter I.	A Century of Population .....	249
Chapter II.	Missouri "Mother of the West" and "Founder of States" .....	266
Chapter III.	A Century of Missouri Agriculture .....	272
Chapter IV.	A Century of Missouri Mining .....	283
Chapter V.	A Century of Transportation .....	294
Chapter VI.	A Century of City Building .....	303
Chapter VII.	A Century of Journalism and Literature	315
Chapter VIII.	A Century of Education .....	326
Appendix	.....	337
Index	.....	338

## PART I

# MISSOURI AND MISSOURIANS

## CHAPTER I

### MISSOURI, THE CENTER STATE

#### THE MISSISSIPPI VALLEY

Lying between the Alleghany and the Rocky mountains on the east and the west, the Great Lakes and the Gulf of Mexico on the north and the south, is the Mississippi valley. This valley is the largest in the United States and one of the largest in the world. It is also the best fitted for man because of the soil, climate, and rainfall.

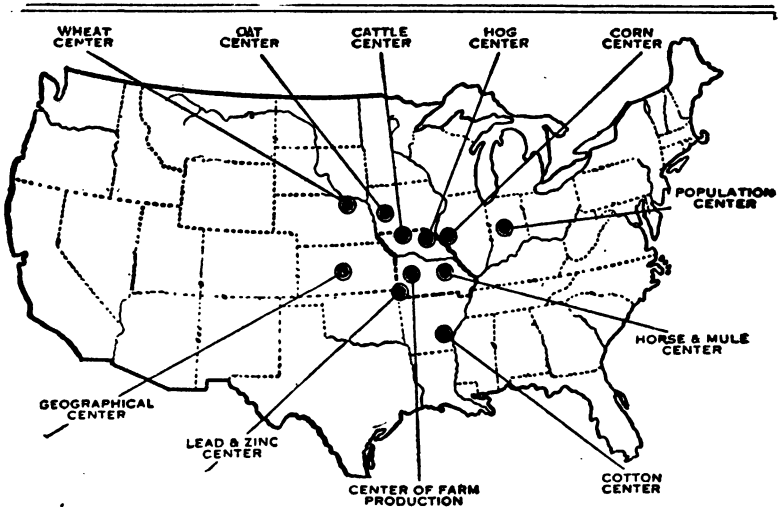
The valley takes its name from the river. The Mississippi river rises in Minnesota and is 2,500 miles long. The Missouri river is the main tributary. In fact, the Missouri is the main river of the valley. It rises in Montana in the Rocky mountains and from its source to its mouth at the Gulf is 4,200 miles long. Not only is the Missouri river longer than the Mississippi river, but it drains three times as much land before it joins the Mississippi as the Mississippi does before it joins the Missouri. The Missouri drains nearly one-half (42%) of the entire Mississippi valley. The total area of the Mississippi valley is 1,250,000 square miles, or eighteen times as large as the State of Missouri. Since the area of our country exclusive of Alaska and Hawaii is 3,026,789 square miles, the Mississippi valley embraces 41% of the United States.

Important as this valley is in size, it is even more important in producing food, clothing, shelter, fuel, and metals. It is nature's storehouse. Blessed by nature with rich soil, valuable metals, broad forests, healthful climate, and abundant

rainfall, the Mississippi valley ranks first in the world in usefulness and products.

### LOCATION OF MISSOURI

In the center of the Mississippi valley lies Missouri with an area of 69,420 square miles. It is about 500 miles from



MISSOURI, THE CENTER STATE

St. Louis east to the Appalachian mountains and it is nearly the same distance from Kansas City west to the Rocky mountains. From south Missouri to the Gulf of Mexico the distance is also 500 miles and from north Missouri to Canada it is about 600 miles. This central location is important. It makes Missouri the natural meeting place of the people of the Mississippi valley. It makes Missouri the central cross roads of trade.

Missouri is also the center state of the Mississippi valley in another sense. It has a central climate which gives it cold



winters in the north and mild winters in the south, hot summers in the north and cool summers in the mountains of the south and southwest.

Even more important is the fact that Missouri is the center state in natural wealth. This wealth consists principally of all the different kinds of soil found in the Mississippi valley, most of the metals and minerals, and nearly all of the useful kinds of timber. Missouri has prairies, bottom land, and mountains. Few states have all of these to such an extent as Missouri.

Finally, Missouri is in one respect the center state of the United States. Five states lie to the east of her and five to the west. Two states lie to the north of her and two to the south. Missouri is not, however, the geographical center of the United States. It is nearly twice as far from Missouri to the Pacific (1,500 miles) as from Missouri to the Atlantic (800 miles).

#### NATURE'S GATEWAY TO THE WEST

Missouri is not only the geographical and the natural resource center of the Mississippi valley, but Missouri is also the river center. Like the threads of an immense web, the rivers stretch over the valley. The center of this web is Missouri. Along her eastern border lies the Mississippi, with its important eastern tributaries, the Wisconsin, Illinois, and Ohio rivers. These rivers tap or connect with the vast country to the north, northeast, east, and in part the southeast, and all of them flow toward Missouri. This made it easier for the people from those parts and especially from the east to come here in pioneer days. It also made it easier to bring eastern goods here. Until the coming of the railroads in the middle of the 19th century, the waterways of the Mississippi valley were the main means of travel. Missouri as the river center stood at the crossroads of trade.

Cutting the State into two parts and forming her north-west boundary is the Missouri river, with its many tributaries, the Yellowstone, Platte, Kansas, and Osage rivers. These tap the even larger country to the northwest and the west, and all flow toward Missouri. This made it natural for Missourians to explore those parts and made it easier for them to bring back the furs trapped on plains and mountains.

Another fact is important. By following the Missouri river and its tributaries, whether by water or land, the Missouri explorer, trader, or trapper came within a few miles of other rivers. If he followed the Missouri river up-stream, he approached close to the Columbia. If he followed the Yellowstone, he could easily reach the Snake. If he followed the Platte, he soon found the Green and the Grand, which form the Colorado, and the Arkansas. The Arkansas was close to the Rio Grande. In short, the Missouri river was the path to the West, and Missouri became the Gateway to the West.

Many Missourians entered the West by boat and many, perhaps more, went by land. In either case, the river course was followed. It was because the river was the guide and because Missouri was the starting point, that Missourians opened the trails and the trade, and later largely settled the country to the northwest, west, and southwest. Missouri became the Gateway to the West.

#### NATURAL WEALTH

Missouri is a favored child of nature. Many states were given rich soil, some rich minerals, and others vast forests, but few were given all of these. Missouri is one of the favored few. She also was given broad rivers, healing springs, a healthful climate, sufficient rainfall, and beautiful scenery. This great natural wealth was given man to develop, not waste, for his own needs and for the needs of his fellowmen.

Missouri's greatest resource is her soil, of which there are many kinds. The most important Missouri soils are bot-

tom, brown loess, prairie, fertile Ozark, and highland Ozark. The bottom soil is very rich and deep. It borders the rivers and creeks and broadens out in southeast Missouri to include seven counties. The brown loess soil is equally fertile and is perhaps more valuable. Beginning in Boone county in central Missouri it borders both sides of the Missouri up-stream, getting much wider, and in northwest Missouri it broadens out to include six counties. About half of St. Louis county has brown loess, and several counties in southeast Missouri have some. Like the bottom soil, it will produce in abundance, and it is especially fine for corn and apples. The prairie soil includes all the State north of the Missouri except the narrow ribbons of bottom and the bands of brown loess. It also covers three counties and about half of three more lying south and southeast of Kansas City. It is fertile and produces most of the grains, hay, and pasture. The Mississippi valley is composed largely of this prairie soil, and it makes the valley the granary of the world. The fertile Ozark soil borders the base of the Ozark mountains. In area it is extensive, but not so large as the prairie. In quality, most of it is good while some of it is very productive. The highland Ozark is thin and stony. It is not a good soil for grain raising or general farming, although there are some fertile patches. In area, it is extensive, covering nearly half of the State lying south of the Missouri. This soil is better for grass farming, such as cattle raising and dairying, and some of it is adapted for fruit. The Ozarks are the oldest part of the continent.

Missouri's mineral resources rank second only to her soil. These mineral resources are extensive and important. Some are found in nearly all parts of the State. They include such useful minerals as coal and iron, lead and zinc, pottery and building clays, marble and stone, sand and gravel, cement rock, and mineral springs. Coal is the most important of these. Rich veins underlie many parts of Missouri. Missouri's coal beds underlie nearly one-third of the state (22,000 square

miles), including nearly all the country north of the Missouri and ten counties of western Missouri south of the river. These beds contain enough coal to furnish fuel for the people for centuries. Only the thick veins are now worked. Missouri leads the world in the production of lead and zinc. Most of the lead comes from St. Francois and neighboring counties in



DAM ACROSS WHITE RIVER AT POWERSITE, MO., FORMING LAKE  
TANEYCOMO

the southeast and from around Jasper county in the southwest. The southwest part also produces all of the zinc. Pottery and building clays, from which are made tile and brick, are found in various parts of Missouri, as are sand and gravel and building stone. Marble and cement rock (from which cement is made) are found in quantity and quality in only a few places. Mineral springs are rather widely scattered. Some of these have healing qualities of much value to man, as are those at Excelsior Springs and Eldorado Springs. From other springs the early settlers made salt by boiling the water. In fact, it was land and lead, salt and furs, that attracted Mis-

souri's first settlers. Of iron Missouri has extensive deposits and years ago the iron industry here was important.

Missouri was once a great lumber state and even today she has much valuable timber. Her yellow pine in the south is being cut rapidly but she still has much oak and walnut timber.



**BIG OZARK SPRING, NORTH OF ALTON, MISSOURI**  
Reported to be the Largest Cold Water Spring in the World. Flows 681,000,000  
Gallons Every Twenty-four Hours

Another source of natural wealth in Missouri is her beautiful scenery. Some states, as Colorado and California, have widely advertised their scenery and made it a source of wealth. In the Missouri Ozarks is scenery full of beauty and interest. Rugged cliffs, clear streams, big natural caves, some of the largest springs in the world, and a mild delightful climate, make this part of the State one of the most fascinating natural playgrounds in America. The views around such places as Ha Ha Tonka in Camden county, Galena in Stone county, and



Branson in Taney county equal the best in America. In fact, the entire Ozark section of Missouri is noted for its scenery and natural wonders. In Oregon county is the largest cold water spring in the world—Big Ozark or Greer Springs. It discharges 486,000,000 gallons of water daily.

The swift flowing streams of the Ozarks are also becoming a source of wealth to Missouri. By building dams across



GRAND FALLS NEAR JOPLIN  
One of the Most Beautiful Natural Waterfalls in the Country

them and putting in machinery, the water is made to work for man. In pioneer days they furnished power to turn the big water-wheels of grain mills. To-day they furnish power from which electricity is made. This electricity is carried by wires to towns and cities miles away where it is used to light homes, run street cars, and operate factories. Water power is sometimes called "white coal."

#### GEOGRAPHY

Nearly two hundred and fifty years ago, the name "Missouri" was first given to a tribe of Indians who lived near the mouth of the Missouri river. The river itself was first called "Pek-i-ta-nou", meaning "muddy water." The name of the In-

dian tribe was later given to the river, and "Pek-i-ta-nou" became "Missouri." The meaning of "Missouri" is uncertain. It is usually thought to mean either "muddy water" or "great muddy."

When the country around the river became a territory, the name of the river was given to the territory. When the territory became a state, cut into two parts by this stream, it was given the same name. So the State of Missouri received its name "Missouri" from the territory; the territory from the river; and the river from the Indians.

The Territory of Missouri, organized in 1812, included all of the Louisiana Purchase except the State of Louisiana. All of the white people lived in what is now Missouri and Arkansas. In 1819 the Territory of Arkansas was set off and in 1820 the State of Missouri was formed. The shape of Missouri in 1820 was the same as it is to-day with one important exception. Instead of the Missouri river north of Kansas City being the western boundary, a line was run directly north. This excluded from Missouri what are to-day the counties of Atchison, Nodaway, Holt, Andrew, Platte, and Buchanan. This tract of rich land was held by the Sac, Fox, and Iowa Indians. It was called the Platte country. The United States government purchased this from the Indians in 1836 and gave it to Missouri. This was called the Platte Purchase, and by it, Missouri's boundary was completed.

Missouri is an easy state to bound. On the north is one state, Iowa, and on the south is one state, Arkansas; on the east are three states, Illinois, Kentucky, and Tennessee; and on the west are three states, Nebraska, Kansas, and Oklahoma.

Missouri is a large state compared to the states east of the Mississippi, but is rather small compared to many of the big states in the west. Her area is a little over 69,000 square miles. From east to west her greatest width is 348 miles and her average width is 235 miles. Her average length from north to south is 242 miles. Although the shape of Missouri

is not square, still her average width and her average length are nearly the same.

### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. State the geographical position of Missouri in the Mississippi valley.
2. Name the three ways in which Missouri may be considered the center state.
3. The fact that Missouri is a center state has influenced her history in what way?
4. What can you say of the importance of Missouri's natural wealth?
5. What is the origin of the name, "Missouri?"
6. When was the original Territory of Missouri organized and what did it include?

## CHAPTER II

### MISSOURIANS

#### THE FIRST INHABITANT—THE INDIAN

When the first white man came to Missouri he found Indian tribes. South of the Missouri river were the Osages, the tallest race of men in North America. North of the Missouri river were the Missouris, Otoes, and Iowas. These three tribes were gradually pushed westward by the Sacs and Foxes, who later took their place in north Missouri. The Kansas tribe of Indians lived near the mouth of the Kaw river. The Delawares and the Shawnees came later. They were invited to settle in southeast Missouri to help protect the white settlements against the warlike Osages. A few Miamis were in central Missouri.

The Osages, Missouris, Otoes, Kansas, and Iowas, were related to each other. They spoke different dialects of the same language. All of them had once lived near the mouth of the Missouri river. The Osages left first and went west and southwest. The Missouris left last, being forced out by the Sacs and Foxes. These latter came from Wisconsin. They were not braver than the other Indians but they were better armed with guns instead of with bow and arrow. The Sacs and Foxes were two tribes but they fought as one. They were treacherous and they were able. They easily defeated other Indian tribes and they gave the white settlers in Missouri much trouble. The Missouris were no match for the Sacs and Foxes and later they disbanded. Some went with the Osages but the majority joined the Otoes. The Delawares and Shawnees came by invitation from Ohio. They were the white man's friends and acted as a barrier between the whites and the Osages. The Kansas and the Iowas did not play an important part in our history.

Just as the Sacs and Foxes forced the Missouris, Otoes, and Iowas westward, so did the white man by treaty, arms, and presents, force the Sacs and Foxes and the other Indian tribes westward. Finally, by 1833 all Missouri was clear of Indian title except the Platte country. The Platte country was also cleared by the Indian treaties of 1836.

The Osages were the most representative Indians of Missouri, and well might any state be proud of having produced such perfect men. They were the tallest race in North America. Few Osage braves were under six feet, many were six feet and six inches, and some were seven feet. They were well formed and good looking. They were quick and graceful. In war and the chase they equalled any. They thought nothing of running sixty miles in one day and they shot an arrow with such force as to go entirely through a grown buffalo. The Osages shaved the head and decorated and painted it with great care. They cut and slit the ears and profusely ornamented them. Unlike other Indians they did not drink whiskey and they had contempt for any one who was drunk. Like most Indians they raised corn, beans, and pumpkins; gathered nuts and berries; and cured the meat killed in the chase. They planted in the spring, hunted in the summer, hid their food in the fall, hunted in early winter, and returned home until spring.

Although the Indians in peace and war played an important part in nearly all American settlements, few states were so fortunate as Missouri. This was due to our French settlers knowing how to deal peaceably and justly with the red man. The American rarely got along so well with the Indian as did the Frenchman. Again, Missouri was fortunate in having a small Indian population. The Indians in Missouri probably never exceeded 15,000 in number. Finally, Missouri was fortunate in having a remarkable man in charge of Indian affairs. This was William Clark, Missouri's last territorial governor. The Indians called Clark, "Red Head" from his red hair. They all honored and feared him.

The Indians were once the only Missourians. None of the original Indians of Missouri live in the State to-day. They are scattered over reservations or are found in Oklahoma. Missouri's first inhabitants have gone. They have left little to remember them by except the name of a stream or county, and some flint arrow heads scattered here and there. Other races were to people the State.



INDIAN VILLAGE SCENE

## THE FIRST WHITE MAN—THE FRENCHMAN

The first white man to make his home in Missouri was the Frenchman. Probably the first white man to see Missouri was the Spaniard, De Soto, but he did not stay. The French were the first explorers, the first traders, and the first settlers. The French were the first Missourians if we except the Indians. They founded the first settlements along the Mississippi; traded for or trapped the first furs along the



INDIAN BUFFALO DANCE

Missouri; planted and gathered the first crops; boiled the first salt; and mined the first lead. They named some of the streams and cities as, Little Bonne Femme (little good woman) and St. Louis, and thousands of their sons and daughters are living in Missouri to-day. The French began coming to Missouri about 1700. They continued to come here for a century. The first settlers came from what is now Illinois, just east of Missouri. Most of the French in Illinois had come from Canada and some from lower Louisiana around New Orleans. So the first white Missourians, the Frenchmen, came from the north and the south. Missouri was to be a center state even from the viewpoint of population.

#### THE SPANIARD, 1770-1804

Although the French came first, they were soon to lose their mother country, France. In 1762 France by a secret treaty ceded to Spain all the Louisiana country, i. e., all the land that she owned lying west of the Mississippi, but it was not until 1770 that Spain sent a governor to St. Louis to govern the upper Louisiana country. From 1770 to 1804 a Spanish governor and a few Spanish soldiers lived in St. Louis. They mixed with the French people, intermarried, and had friendly social relations. There were very few Spaniards who came to Missouri but they contributed their share to the history of the State. One of the greatest explorers and fur traders Missouri produced was a Spaniard, named Lisa, of St. Louis.

#### THE EARLY AMERICANS, 1780-1804

Within a decade after the coming of the Spaniard in 1770, the American reached Missouri. Only a few came at first, but between 1780 and 1804 they came in hundreds. Many were from Illinois and Indiana but more were from Kentucky. Nearly all were of southern birth, i. e., Kentucky, Virginia, and Tennessee.



## LATER AMERICANS, 1804-1860

The flood of Americans that had started before the purchase of Louisiana by the United States in 1803, grew even larger after 1804. At first most of these came from the South, Virginia, Kentucky, and the two Carolinas, Maryland, and Tennessee, but a few came from the Middle States, Pennsylvania, and New York. Later more of the Americans began coming from these Middle States and from Illinois, Indiana, and Ohio, although the immigrants from the Southern States still were in the majority. From this it is seen that the Missourian was at first a full-blood Frenchman with a slight Spanish dressing. Later he became half-French and half-American. Then he was fairly swamped in the flow of new American immigrants. These Americans came from the South and easily out-numbered all others, then later other immigrants began coming from eastern states. Missouri was again proving to be a center state.

## THE GERMAN, 1830-1860

Beginning about 1830 a new people appeared in Missouri. These were the Germans. Some persons of German blood had settled in Missouri before this but they had come either from Ohio or Pennsylvania. In 1824 an educated German doctor named Duden came here and lived two years in Warren county. On returning to Germany he wrote a book which pictured Missouri as a wonderful land of opportunity. At that time Germany was governed by many petty kings and life was very hard for the people. So Duden's book became popular and thousands of Germans sold their property and came to Missouri. This took place between 1830 and 1850.

In 1848 the German people in Germany rebelled against their kings. The people were defeated and thousands left Germany. Many of these came to Missouri. Some of our counties are to-day peopled by the sons and daughters of these early German pioneers, who loved freedom even more than

their old home-land. Many settled in the country and became farmers, while others settled in the city.

#### THE IRISH, 1850-1860

Just as the Germans left Germany through hope of opportunity and love of freedom, so did the Irish leave Ireland. The Irish were struggling with the English for freedom and independence. The Irish were overcome and their condition was desperate. They lacked both freedom and food. They began to come to America. The potato crop, the main food crop of Ireland, failed. Tens of thousands now left their old homes to seek new ones here. Some came to Missouri between 1850 and 1860. They settled mainly in our cities.

#### RECENT AMERICANS, 1865-1920

After the Civil War a new American immigration poured into Missouri. These new settlers came mainly from the east, especially from Illinois, Indiana, and Ohio. As the former Americans in Missouri had come largely from the south and the majority were Democrats, so the ones from the east and northeast were usually Republicans. (The Irish were usually Democrats and the Germans, Republicans.) Many of the Union (or northern) soldiers who had passed through Missouri during the war, on their return home decided to settle here. They also told their neighbors. Moreover, land was cheaper here than to the eastward. This eastern and northern immigration to Missouri kept up for a number of years. About 1870 another American immigration set in. This was from Iowa and Illinois. Land in these states had become very high. Hence a number of people from these states crossed over and settled in Missouri. They also were largely Republican in politics. This new immigration is still going on.

## FOREIGNERS

In recent years Missouri has received a number of foreigners. Some of the principal peoples of this class are Swedes, Bohemians, Poles, Swiss, and Italians. The number of foreign born in Missouri is very small, there being only five per cent of Missouri's people born on foreign soil.

## THE NEGRO

The first negroes on Missouri soil were slaves brought here from the West Indies to work the lead mines. This was before any permanent settlement had been made in Missouri. Prior to the Civil War, the negro population brought from the South by the American settler kept increasing. Most of these were slaves. Since the war, the negro has been free.

## CONCLUSION

So "Missourians" means more than most people think. In the first place, the Missourian in ninety-five cases out of one hundred is native born. Missourians include the French, German and Irish races grafted on and absorbed by the American stock both northern and southern. Missourians are really a center people, just as their state is a center state. To understand this is to appreciate more easily many things in Missouri history, Missouri politics, and Missouri thinking even today.

## SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. Locate the nine Indian tribes in Missouri.
2. Which tribes were the most peaceable and which the most warlike?
3. Describe the most representative tribe of Missouri.
4. How do you explain the friendly relations existing between the Indians and the first white inhabitants?
5. What nationalities predominated in the immigration to Missouri during the period from 1700 to 1804? How does this compare with the period from 1830 to 1920?
6. What percentage of Missourians are native born?

## PART II

# MISSOURI A FOREIGN POSSESSION 1541-1804

### THE DAY OF THE FRENCHMAN

#### CHAPTER I

### EARLY SPANISH AND FRENCH EXPLORERS, 1541-1804

#### MISSOURI A CENTER STATE OF EXPLORATION

Missouri was visited in early days by both the Spanish and the French and later was owned by both. The Spaniard came first, arriving here only half a century after Columbus discovered America. The Spaniard did not stay. Others came every thirty or forty years on exploring trips. This continued from 1541 to about 1720, a period of nearly two hundred years. The Spanish came first from the southeast or Florida, later from the southwest or New Mexico. They did not aid in settling Missouri because they did not have that object in view. The Spanish explorer in Missouri sought gold and silver, later he came to oppose the French. He failed in both. He never stayed long enough to do anything lasting for himself although he influenced Missouri history in a way that he least expected. He laid open the path to his own country in New Mexico, and later along that path developed a great trade—The Santa Fe trade.

The Frenchman came much later. He first appeared in, or near, Missouri about 1659. Others came from the northeast or Canada and later from the east or Illinois. In half a century other French explorers came from the south or Louisiana. This exploring of Missouri by the French continued

for about a century and a half (1659-1804). During this time settlements were made. The Frenchman wanted to discover a water route to the western ocean and build an empire for France. Like the Spaniard, he sought gold and silver but when he failed to find either in Missouri, he turned to other objects as salt, lead, furs, and trade. The main work of the Frenchman in Missouri was to explore and settle and in this he succeeded. It was because the French not only explored but also settled the Mississippi valley that they claimed and maintained their possession of it. The Spanish first explored it but did not settle it.

As a result of European wars, Missouri became a Spanish possession in 1762. Although in 1800 Spain gave back the Louisiana country, i. e., the land west of the Mississippi river to France, and France sold it to the United States in 1803, a Spanish governor continued to rule here until the United States took actual possession in 1804. So Missouri although French in population, remained a Spanish possession for nearly forty years. This might be called the Spanish-French period of exploration but since it differed so little, if any, from the period before, it is well to think of it merely as a continuation of the French period. The rulers were Spanish, the people were French. Missouri was more widely explored, especially for lead, salt, and trade.

The next half century of Missouri exploration (1804-1850) is the American period, although during the first twenty years of this period the Missouri-French were very active and prominent. During these years the exploration of Missouri was completed. The exploration was largely for good land. Then Missourians in turn became explorers of the states lying to the west. Missouri by the latter work became the "Mother of States" both by right of exploration and by right of settlement. These western explorations of Missouri were largely for the purpose of trading.

## THE SPANIARD SOUGHT GOLD AND SILVER

In April 1541, less than half a century after Columbus discovered America, De Soto a Spaniard, exploring north-westward from Florida, discovered the Mississippi river. He and his men crossed and traveled over much of Arkansas. They probably even entered southeastern Missouri. Although looking for gold and silver, they found neither. A year later De Soto died and was buried in the river he had discovered. His expedition failed and only a few survivors ever reached civilization.

It is remarkable that during the same year, 1541, another Spanish expedition was traveling toward, and possibly also entering, Missouri. This one came from the southwest. It was led by Coronado. It also was seeking gold and silver. Coronado, like De Soto, found no precious metals and he soon left for the Spanish settlements in Mexico. Coronado came close to Missouri and it is possible that he entered the western parts of the State.

All later Spanish explorers, who came near or entered Missouri, started from the Spanish settlements around Santa Fe, New Mexico. During the century following De Soto and Coronado, there were at least three of these exploring parties. The routes taken by these are not known with exactness because they were over the broad plains of Texas, Oklahoma, and Kansas. It is probably that some of these explorers entered Missouri along the west and several may have gone quite a distance toward the Mississippi.

These explorers all speak of Missouri as a beautiful land of tall trees, rich grass, and many kinds of luscious fruit—as plums and berries. The Spaniards were not, however, looking for these. They still sought gold, silver, and precious stones. Not finding these, they returned to Santa Fe.

The last Spanish expedition from New Mexico to Missouri was in 1720. Its purpose was to trade with the Indians.

perhaps get the Indians to join in a treaty against the French, and to explore the country along the Missouri. This party was badly defeated by the Indians. Only one person survived. Some Frenchmen may have helped the Missouri Indians in the defeat. Almost exactly one hundred years after this Spanish trading expedition left Santa Fe, a Missouri expedition entered Santa Fe to trade with the people of New Mexico.

One story told of this expedition of 1720 is that the Spanish came to form an alliance with the Osages against the Missouris and the French. By chance the Spanish met first the Missouris and mistook them for the Osages. They told the Missouris their plans. The Missouris pretended to agree but they soon ambushed the Spanish and destroyed them. So ended the Spanish exploration period of history. Its object had been too narrow. The Spanish in their search for gold and silver overlooked the greater wealth Missouri had in furs, lead, and rich soil. To Spain belongs the honor of discovering the Mississippi river; to France is the greater honor of rediscovering it and of exploring and settling the great Mississippi valley and Missouri.

#### THE FRENCH SOUGHT TRADE AND COMMERCE—FURS, LEAD, AND SALT

Between the coming of De Soto and Coronado in 1541 and the appearance of the French nearly a century passed. During this time the Spanish had settled in Florida, New Mexico, South America, and the West Indies; the English had founded a fringe of settlements along the Atlantic; and the French held a narrow strip along the St. Lawrence and had explored westward on the Great Lakes. In 1634 a young Frenchman named Nicollet reached the upper Mississippi river. His object was to find a water route to the western ocean, which would give a short passage to India.

French traders, soldiers, and missionaries then began traversing the country lying between the Ohio and the Mississippi.

In 1659, two of their traders, Radisson and Groseilliers, went as far west as the Mississippi and not only re-discovered the river but may have even discovered the Missouri. If so, they were the first white men to see both rivers. Like the early Spanish explorers, it is not certain where these men traveled, i. e., how far south and west they went. These remarkable men later served England and founded the great Hudson Bay Company.

The next explorer to leave Canada for the central Mississippi valley was Joliet, a native born Canadian. He was accompanied by a missionary named Marquette and five Frenchmen. Traveling down the Mississippi river in two light canoes, loaded with smoked meat, corn, and presents for the Indians, he entered the Mississippi. This was in 1673. Along the way he made peace with the Indian tribes, gave presents, and smoked the calumet, or the pipe of peace. This expedition wanted to learn where the Mississippi emptied and was hoping that the Mississippi led to the western ocean. Joliet passed the mouth of the Missouri and noticed its muddy water. The expedition may have camped on Missouri soil since a vein of iron ore was noticed here. After traveling south, Joliet came to where the Arkansas Indians lived. There he camped. The Indians gave a feast to the party. The feast consisted of buffalo meat, bear's oil, and white plums. Learning from the Indians that the Mississippi emptied into the Gulf of Mexico, the expedition returned to Canada. Father Marquette later died in the wilds of Michigan and Joliet died in Canada. This expedition did much to interest the French in the Mississippi valley.

The leading spirit of western French exploration was the patriotic French soldier and explorer La Salle, who in 1671 had discovered the Ohio river. In 1682 he left Canada for the west and to him is the honor of being the first white man to navigate the Mississippi from its upper course to the Gulf. On April 9, 1682, he reached the mouth of the Mississippi.



ans were hostile and he was forced to return. He then started from Kaskaskia, in Illinois, and crossed the Mississippi to what is now Ste. Genevieve county. From here he traveled westward across the Ozarks until he finally came to the source of the Osage. Somewhere in western Missouri he, like La Salle, erected the standard of France and took possession of the country. During this land expedition (1718-20), Du Tisne learned much about Missouri. He found lead, met Indians, observed that the Indians had horses, and noted the beautiful streams and prairies. He had many interesting experiences. One time when he and his men were with some Indians, he learned that the Indians were planning to scalp him. Du Tisne wore a wig and had just shaved his head. Taking off his wig and throwing it on the ground, he said, "You will have my scalp? Take it up if you dare." The Indians were afraid to hurt a man who could, as they thought, take off his own scalp. At another time he feared the Indians would massacre his party. He told them that if they became hostile he would burn the waters in their rivers and fire their forests. Taking some brandy, he poured it out and set fire to it. The Indians had never before seen liquor burn and they were startled. Du Tisne then took a sun-glass from his pocket and held it so that it concentrated the sun's rays on some dry leaves and again the Indians thought Du Tisne had great power. Du Tisne's exploration was important. He opened the way across the Ozarks into western Missouri and he made friends with the Indians.

Three years after Du Tisne returned from his exploration, a Frenchman named De Bourgmont was ordered by the French government to found a fort on the Missouri river and to explore the country to the west. This was in 1723. Bourgmont with twenty soldiers went up the Missouri river and somewhere between what is to-day Brunswick and Malta Bend, erected a fort. He called it Fort Orleans. This was the first European settlement in Missouri, if the temporary

settlements already mentioned are excepted. De Bourgmont soon set out with an expedition toward the west. He wanted to make treaties with the Indians, get near the Spanish, and if possible, open trade with both. He came to the mouth of the Kaw, where Kansas City now is, and then went south. He made several trips to western and southwestern Missouri. In 1724 he persuaded twelve Indians to go with him to France. These Indians were entertained royally. One of the Indian maidens married a lieutenant of De Bourgmont. After some time in France, the Indians returned to their home in Missouri loaded with presents and full of stories of what they had seen. In 1726 Fort Orleans was abandoned.

Other Frenchmen besides these mentioned explored Missouri but these were the most important. The effect of the explorations was to make known the extent and the resources of this land. All of southeast Missouri as far north as the Missouri river was fairly well explored and its rich lead deposits and its salt springs were discovered and used. The shores of the Mississippi were explored from the Des Moines south. Parts of the Ozarks were known as were the prairies of western Missouri south of the river. The Missouri river had been explored as far west as Kansas City and had been traversed as far north as the Dakotas.

During these years there persisted the old idea of finding a water route to the Pacific. This idea was not given up until Lewis and Clark made their famous expedition in 1804-1806. Another plan developing at this time was to trade with the Spaniards in Santa Fe, New Mexico. In 1703 twenty French-Canadians left Illinois for Santa Fe to trade. Nothing more is known about them. Again, when De Bourgmont started westward from Fort Orleans in 1723, one of the purposes was to get in touch with the Spaniards if possible. The French were anxious to trade with Santa Fe but for years the powerful Sac and Fox Indians at the mouth of the Missouri prevented them from making progress. In 1734 a French expedition went up

There he planted a column bearing the arms of France, and, in the name of his king, took possession of the Mississippi valley in the name of France. La Salle had vision. He planned to build here a colonial empire for France. He went to France and interested the king. With a fleet and settlers he sailed for the mouth of the Mississippi. He landed in Texas. Here famine, Indians, and treachery finally overcame his expedition. La Salle was murdered and only a few of his settlers survived. Some of these traveled north and may have passed through Missouri on their way to Canada.

From this time French exploration increased in the Mississippi valley and in Missouri. Permanent settlements were made in Illinois just opposite the Missouri side and temporary settlements were made in Missouri. Hunters, explorers, traders, and miners traveled over Missouri. Four things impressed these early visitors in Missouri—soil, salt, lead, and furs. Even before 1700 there were one or two temporary settlements in Missouri. One was located in what is now south St. Louis, and another in Ste. Genevieve county. Not much is known about these early settlements as they were later abandoned. Much more is known about what was being done in Missouri by the French.

As early as 1688 a Frenchman named La Hontan came down the Mississippi and up the Missouri to the mouth of the Osage. Here he built several huts. He was the first white explorer to go up the Missouri as far as the Osage. He was also the first white visitor who hunted in Missouri. He had a shot gun and when he discharged it near some Missouri Indians, they all rushed from their huts and begged for mercy.

As early as 1700 the rich lead mines of Missouri were well known and were being worked by the Canadian-French living in Illinois. The salt springs of Ste. Genevieve county were known and their waters were boiled to obtain the salt. It was lead and salt that brought Missouri her settlers. The profitable fur trade with the Indians in Missouri brought hunters and traders and later brought settlers.

Even the French government in France knew of Missouri's rich lead mines and was interested. In 1717 the Company of the West was founded in Paris. It was given exclusive control over Louisiana for twenty-five years. This company began working the lead mines in Missouri and lead was sent to Illinois, Indiana, Canada, New Orleans, and even to France. The company gave a Frenchman named Renault a mineral grant and in 1723 he left France with full equipment to mine lead in Missouri. At San Domingo his ship picked up 500 negro slaves to work the mines. These were the first slaves in Missouri. Renault stayed until 1732 and he mined large quantities of lead.

While scores of Frenchmen were working Missouri's lead mines, other Frenchmen, usually the Canadian-French, were hunting, trading, and exploring in Missouri. The profitable fur trade drew many. These traversed not only the Mississippi but went up the Missouri and some of its large tributaries. Others came here to explore. The old idea of Nicollet and Joliet to find a water route to the western ocean had not been dropped although the course of the Mississippi was now known. The Indians and even some of the French hunters told stories of the Missouri river rising far to the westward in high mountains. They said that only a short distance from this river source was the beginning of another river which flowed into the western ocean. A century later these stories were found to be true, as two Americans, Lewis and Clark, later proved. It is not surprising to find these early Frenchmen exploring the Missouri river even though they did not reach its source. The French government also heard of these stories and as early as 1708 ordered an exploration of the Missouri river but this was abandoned.

Ten years later a French-Canadian named Du Tisne came here. He should be remembered because he was the first to make a real exploration of Missouri. He went up the Missouri as far as the Osage and the Gasconade, but the Missouri Indi-

## CHAPTER II

### THE FIRST CENTURY OF SETTLEMENT, 1700-1804

*Missouri's fur, lead, salt, and soil brought Frenchmen and Americans to our land.*

#### THE EXPLORER BRINGS THE SETTLER

Not long after Joliet and La Salle floated down the Mississippi, came Canadian-French missionaries, hunters, trappers, traders, and lead miners to Missouri. Several temporary settlements were made. One in what is now south St. Louis on the River des Peres is said to have been the first white settlement on the Mississippi river. This was before 1700. The first permanent settlements appeared on the east bank of the Mississippi in the Illinois country. These were at Kaskaskia and Cahokia. From these Illinois settlements, made by the Canadian-French, men came to Missouri to explore and trade, and finally to settle. Around the lead mines in eastern Missouri temporary settlements sprang up and some of these may have had a continuous life. The establishment of Fort Orleans in 1723 was partly for military purposes and partly for trade and exploration. The explorer was soon followed by the temporary settler, and the temporary settler by the permanent settler. The Illinois-French explorers and settlers also came to Missouri to get salt. Opposite Kaskaskia, on the Missouri side of the Mississippi, in what is today Ste. Genevieve county, were salt springs. Salt was as necessary as lead to the pioneer. It cured his meat and flavored his food. Soon some of the Illinois-French built temporary huts near the salt springs. The land near these was rich and fertile. A natural path led from the salt springs to the lead mines. Naturally a settlement appeared and grew. It was called Ste. Genevieve. This was the first permanent settlement in Mis-

souri. The date of its founding is not known. It is usually placed in 1732 or 1735, but Ste. Genevieve probably had inhabitants long before either year. It is also probable that no certain year can be set, since traders, miners, and salt makers lived in Ste. Genevieve at first for a short time, then for a longer time, and finally some made it their permanent home. Just as the explorer brought or became the trader and temporary settler, so the latter became the permanent settler.

#### THE FOUNDING OF ST. LOUIS

The founding of St. Louis differed from the founding of Ste. Genevieve. The salt springs, the rich bottom land, and its location opposite Kaskaskia on the path to the lead mines, made Ste. Genevieve. No one man was the founder of Ste. Genevieve, and probably no one year can be set as the date of its founding. St. Louis, Missouri's second permanent settlement, was founded by Laclede in the year 1764, for the purpose of a fur trading post and settlement. The story of St. Louis is one of the most interesting in the history of American cities. Its location was a monument to the foresight of Laclede, its growth a monument to the energy of its citizens and to the resources of Missouri and the West. St. Louis began as a fur trading post; to-day it is the raw fur center of the world.

Living in New Orleans in 1762 were two friends,—a rich merchant named Maxent and an active young Frenchman named Laclede. Maxent obtained from the French governor permission to trade with the Indians on the Missouri. He and Laclede formed a company, "The Louisiana Fur Company." Maxent furnished the money, Laclede was to be the leader and do the work. A year later, after making preparations, Laclede with a party of workmen, hunters, and trappers, sailed up the Mississippi. In some respects, this was the most important expedition in Missouri history. After three months of slow sailing, Laclede reached the Illinois-Missouri



STATUE OF LACLEDE

country in November 1763. His party wintered at Fort Chartres, on the Illinois side. Laclède at once began looking for a suitable trading post location. He and a thirteen year old boy, Auguste Chouteau, explored on foot the Missouri side along the Mississippi. A few miles below the mouth of the Missouri river Laclède found an ideal spot. It had a good harbor, a fine site free from ordinary floods, big forest trees for building and fuel, rich soil for crops, springs for drinking water, and an excellent location for trading on both the Missouri and

the Mississippi. Laclède was delighted. He cut notches in some of the trees to mark the place, and told his young companion that when the river was free from ice he would send him here with workmen to start building a settlement. Both returned to Fort Chartres. Laclède is reported to have said: "I have found a situation where I intend establishing a settlement which in the future, shall become one of the most beautiful cities of the world."

Young Chouteau with thirty men crossed the Mississippi in February 1764. They landed on the 14th, and on the 15th



AUGUSTE CHOUTEAU

the building of St. Louis began. Laclède came over in the spring. By fall all of his party and many Canadian-French in Illinois had made St. Louis their home.

The young man Auguste Chouteau, whom Laclède had with him, was one of a remarkable family. His mother, Madame Chouteau, and her children were among the early settlers in St. Louis. Madame Chouteau is called "The Mother of St. Louis." She was a good business woman and a progressive citizen. She was interested in the fur trade. It is said that she brought the first hive of honey bees to Missouri and



that from them started the many swarms of wild bees for which Missouri became known. Two of her sons Auguste and Pierre were great fur traders and did much to develop that business.

The growth of St. Louis was aided by the fact, now known by all, that France by the treaty of 1763 had ceded all her land east of the Mississippi to England. The French settlers in Illinois knew that this meant English governors, English soldiers, and English laws. These they hated. Many crossed over to the Missouri side. Some settled in St. Louis, which now grew rapidly. These people did not know that France in 1762 had ceded to Spain the country west of the Mississippi. When they learned of this, they were disappointed, but even then they preferred Spain to England.

#### THE FIRST IMMIGRATION OF THE ILLINOIS-FRENCH, 1764-1780

The effect of the English-French treaty of 1763 was important in the settlement of Missouri. Hundreds of the Illinois-French left their old homes to come to Missouri. Many tore down their houses and carried them across the Mississippi. Some Illinois villages were deserted. Both Ste. Genevieve and St. Louis increased in population and in five years they together had nearly 1000 persons. Some of these Illinois-French also settled in the country and around the lead mines. Around these isolated farms and mining camps, settlements were later to grow. Among the most important which had their beginning during this period were Carondelet and Potosi.

#### THE SECOND IMMIGRATION OF THE ILLINOIS-FRENCH AND THE FIRST AMERICAN IMMIGRATION, 1780-1795

Just as the treaty of 1763 and the coming of the English gave Missouri her first big increase in population, so did the American Revolutionary War and the peace treaty of 1783 give Missouri her second increase. During the Revolutionary

War Virginia sent General George Rogers Clark with soldiers to conquer the Illinois country and drive out the British. This was in 1778. The Illinois-French who had not moved to Missouri helped Clark in every way and he soon drove the British from Illinois and Indiana. The French settlers soon regretted the coming of the Americans. After Clark left, his soldiers took property from the French. The government set up by the Americans was oppressive and inefficient. The American money was at that time of little or no value and the Illinois-French were also defrauded by land speculators. This awful condition of affairs lasted from 1778 to 1790. It resulted in the second immigration of the Illinois-French to Missouri. New settlements were made. Among these were St. Charles 1780, Florissant, near St. Louis, 1785, and New Bourbon, near Ste. Genevieve, 1793.

During these years, between 1780 and 1795, American settlers also began coming to Missouri. Good land and rich lead brought them. The first American probably came in 1770 but not until ten years later did any considerable number arrive. The cause of this first American immigration to Missouri was the Northwest Ordinance of 1787. This ordinance prohibited slavery north of the Ohio and south of the Great Lakes. Many of the settlers living in that section owned slaves. Some of these settlers began moving westward to Missouri where slavery was permitted by Spain. After the passage of the Northwest Ordinance many settlers from slave-holding states, as Virginia and Maryland, who had intended settling in the Northwest country, passed on down the Ohio. Most of these settled in Missouri. They helped found Cape Girardeau, 1795, New Madrid, 1789, and Little Prairie, 1790, and many settled in the country along the creeks.

#### THE SECOND AMERICAN IMMIGRATION, 1795-1804

Although some Americans came to Missouri before 1795, they were few compared to the hundreds of families who came

Missouri by 1804 had both the people and the resources to begin the building of a great American territory and state.

Just as Laclede and the Chouteaus stand out as Frenchmen in early Missouri history, so do the Boone and Austin families as Americans. Daniel Boone was a true western American pioneer. He was a hunter, scout, Indian fighter, and settler. Boone was born in Pennsylvania. He settled early in North Carolina. Later he was one of the first white men to explore Kentucky where he and his family settled. He was defrauded of his Kentucky land and came to Missouri where he died in 1820. Boone county was named in his honor. His sons were fine men. Moses Austin was the Missouri head of the Austin family. He also came early to Missouri where he engaged in lead mining. He was very progressive. Years later he went to Texas to found an American colony. His son Stephen Austin carried on his work in Texas where he died highly honored.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. How do you explain that the first permanent settlement in Missouri was made at Ste. Genevieve?
2. Compare the founding of St. Louis with the founding of Ste. Genevieve.
3. Why was the French treaty of 1763 important in the settlement of Missouri?
4. What event in American history gave Missouri her second increase in population? Explain why this occurred.
5. What were the causes which led to the great American immigration into Missouri from 1795 to 1804?
6. Compare the population of Missouri in 1769, 1895 and 1804.

### CHAPTER III

## MISSOURI UNDER SPANISH RULE, 1770-1804

*Spain gave Missouri good government. The people grew and prospered.*

### THE GOVERNMENT

Although the Louisiana country was given to Spain by the secret treaty of 1762, she did not send a lieutenant governor to upper Louisiana until 1770. From that year to 1804 a Spanish lieutenant governor ruled Missouri. In 1800 Spain ceded Louisiana to France but no French lieutenant governor came to Missouri. In 1803 France sold Louisiana to the United States but formal transfer of upper Louisiana did not take place until 1804. So from 1770 to 1804 a Spanish lieutenant governor ruled Missouri.

Under Spanish rule the Louisiana country was divided into lower and upper Louisiana. Missouri was part of upper Louisiana and in population it was the most important part. The capital of upper Louisiana was St. Louis. Here lived the lieutenant governor. The lieutenant governor had an assistant, called a commandant, in each of the five districts; and each commandant had an assistant, called a syndic, in each of the local settlements. These were the only government officials except a few surveyors, clerks, and soldiers. There was no legislature, town council, tax collector, lawyer, or jury in Missouri. The lieutenant governor made a few simple laws, which he enforced. He and his commandants and syndics applied these laws when someone did a wrong or got into a dispute. The lieutenant governor was military commander, governor, judge, and legislature all combined; his assistants had similar powers only in a smaller degree.

The settlers both French and American liked this kind of government, although they had no voice in it as we have to-day. They liked it because it was cheap, efficient, and quick. Instead of a lawsuit costing much money and time, disputes were settled in a few hours without cost. There were no lawyers to pay. The commandant or syndic heard the parties in dispute, and gave his judgment. The case could be appealed to the lieutenant governor and from him to the governor general at New Orleans, but this was seldom done. There was little crime in those days but when a crime was committed, or some one gossiped ill of his neighbor, or slandered his neighbor, or stole a horse, or talked against the government, then the guilty man or woman was quickly judged and punished, usually whipped. People knew this, and they were careful. It made them respect each other and honor their government.

Missouri had eight lieutenant governors during the Spanish period. All of these, except perhaps one, were esteemed by the people. The last one was a Frenchman called DeLassus. Some of his descendants are living in Missouri to-day. The Spanish governors of Missouri had no trouble with the settlers. They had some trouble with the Indians, especially the Sacs and Foxes in north Missouri and the Osages in the Ozarks. By means of presents they managed to keep on fairly peaceable terms. The English they never liked and with them had open conflict.

#### BRITISH ATTACK ON ST. LOUIS, 1780

Hardly had a decade passed after the founding of St. Louis when the news came that the American colonists were in revolt against England. In 1778 Virginia sent General George Rogers Clark with his Kentucky riflemen to take from the British all north of the Ohio and east of the Mississippi. General Clark succeeded. The Spanish in Missouri sympathized with Clark and the Americans. The British decided to attack St. Louis, retake Illinois, and march in victory to New



**BRITISH AND INDIAN ATTACK ON ST. LOUIS, 1780.**  
From Missouri Capitol Paintings, By Berninghaus

Orleans. A force of Indians and a few Canadian-French under British leaders gathered in the north. Word was fortunately brought to St. Louis, but many of the French settlers were in the field plowing. The attack, which lasted only one day, was made on May 26, 1780. The French lost many, both in killed and wounded, but the British and Indians failed. Not only was St. Louis saved but also the other Missouri settlements. The British withdrew. The next year, war having opened between Spain and England, a Spanish and French force was sent to attack the British at St. Joseph, Michigan. They succeeded and then returned to St. Louis.

#### HOW THE SETTLERS LIVED

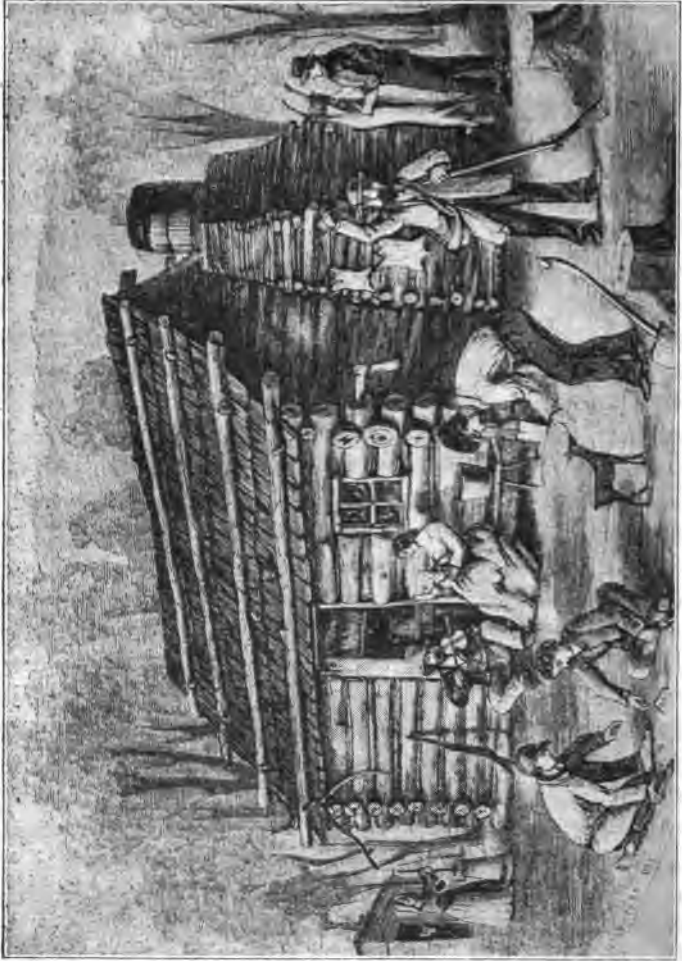
Just as the government during the Spanish rule was simple so was the life of the people. Their houses, furniture, dress, amusements, towns, farms, business, and transportation were much simpler than today. The French lived in towns. They liked to meet their neighbors, observe holidays, play games, dress up, dance, and go to church. They were more sociable, cultured, and polite than the Americans. The French were also noted for their happy disposition, their honesty, and their peacefulness. The Americans lived on farms. They were honest and hospitable, but they were not so sociable or polite. Their games were those showing out-of-door strength or skill, like wrestling and rifle shooting; the French liked indoor games of skill, like billiards, or games of chance, like cards. The Americans had a serious disposition. Some of them were more inclined to fight and make trouble. They were fearless and dared any danger. They were more enterprising than the French but they did not get the Frenchman's enjoyment out of life. This was true among the American women, who reared large families on isolated farms.

The French and Americans were different in other ways. The main source of living was farming but both did not regard farming in the same way. The Frenchman farmed in order

to make a living so that he could enjoy life. He was not ambitious to own much land or become wealthy. He lived in town and had one or two long, narrow thirty-five or forty acre lots, about two hundred feet wide and one and a half miles long, back of his garden. This lot was part of a large field next to each French settlement. The field was called the "common field." Each Frenchman owned his own farm lot in the "common field." This field was fenced by all the lot owners, each having to do his share. Besides the "common field", the French set aside another large tract of ground near the village for pasture for their stock and for firewood. It also was fenced by all. This was called the "commons" and was owned by all and not by individuals as was the "common field." By this kind of farming the French obtained two results—they were able to earn a living from the soil and still live in town, and by co-operating in building one fence for a large tract of ground they saved themselves much labor. Since they lived close to each other they were enabled to help in lending tools and labor. It must have been a beautiful sight to have seen a hundred men out in the long, narrow fields working side by side, throwing jokes, singing songs, and making the hills echo with their laughter. Certainly the Frenchman made farming a pleasure.

The American farmer was quite different. He wanted to make a living but he was equally interested in becoming wealthy. He laughed at the little forty acre lots of the French. He wanted hundreds of acres, sometimes he wanted thousands. The American knew that some day land in Missouri would grow in value (in money) just as it had in the east and as it was growing in Kentucky. But to own large farms and make a living on them, meant isolation in those days. Therefore, the American farmer settled farther back in the country. He liked such a life. By nature he was independent and he wanted to live far enough away that he could not hear the bark of his neighbor's dog. He wanted to be next to the





PIONEER TIMES IN MISSOURI

forest abounding in wild game that could be killed with his rifle or caught by his traps. The American farmer was not unsociable and he was always hospitable but he lived so far from others that sociability was not so easy as with the French. The Americans also co-operated as in building houses, "house-raising" as they called it, and sharing fresh meat. However, distance with roads frequently impassable, prevented them from aiding each other as did the French.

Even in building houses the French and the Americans differed. Both made their homes out of hewed logs. The French placed the logs on end, like a picket fence only as closely together as possible. The spaces between were filled with mortar or clay and then whitewashed. The Americans placed the logs lengthwise, one on another. Both styles were rarely over one-story high. The first two-story rock house in Missouri was built by Nathan Boone, a son of Daniel Boone. It is still standing three miles north of Marthasville. The French also built some stone houses but generally they built of logs. Both the French and the American house had only two rooms. One room served as a kitchen, the other as a living room, dining room, and bedroom combined. Sometimes this combination room had one or two small rooms partitioned off for sleeping quarters, and sometimes the children slept in the loft or attic, which was reached by a ladder. The French two-room house was a single building, wider than it was deep. It had windows with small glass panes. Since there were no stoves one or two big chimneys of rock or clay with fireplaces were used for cooking and heating. Porches ran along the entire front and rear, the roof over the porches being a continuation of the house roof. The American two-room house was a double building, also wider than it was deep, with an open place between the two buildings or cabins. One roof covered both buildings and the open place. The roof was made of clapboards hewed from sections of logs and were about three-fourths of an inch thick, four or five inches wide, and three to

were no public schools, but in the villages the Catholic churches gave elementary instruction. The mass of the people were uneducated.

The dress of the first settlers was simple. The French dress differed from the American. For everyday wear the Frenchman wore a coarse cloth coat with a cape, which could be used to cover the head. Both men and women wore blue handkerchiefs over the head and moccasins to protect the feet. The French woman was more tasty in her dress and followed the fashions of Paris. On holidays and Sundays the men also wore more stylish clothes. Both men and women loved colors in their dress.

The American settler wore a long hunting shirt or coat, which came to the knees. This was made of buckskin or coarse cloth. His breeches were also of this material. He wore either shoes or moccasins, but preferred shoes. Frequently he went barefooted in the summer, especially if he were poor. The American liked a hat and always wore one. It was made either of skin or of cloth. The coonskin hat was popular with hunters. The American woman tried to dress like her people "back East." She also wore a hat when she wanted to appear well dressed. This hat, which was very pretty and attractive, was in the general shape of a bonnet.

#### CONCLUSION

Missouri under Spanish rule was well governed. The people were happy and contented. There was little crime and life and property were protected. The settlers were of French or American blood. They lived together in peace and harmony. The population increased rapidly from 1795 to 1804. The early settlers were French; they built our first cities. The later settlers were American; they were our first real country farmers. The Frenchman worked in order to enjoy life; the American worked to make a living, to own much property, and to become wealthy. The American was more ambitious and

energetic. It was his energy and independence in pushing farther and farther into the wilderness that laid the foundations of our State. All were law abiding and honored their government.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. Describe the political form of government in the Louisiana country under the Spanish rule.
2. Give an account of the attack by the British on St. Louis in 1780.
3. Contrast the French method of farming with the American method.
4. Describe the American and the French pioneer house.
5. Tell of the chief occupations of the American and Frenchman.
6. Of what importance was the city in pioneer days?
7. Describe the dress of the Frenchman. Describe the dress of the American.
8. What was the religion of the people during this period?
9. Give your impression of the Spanish period.

five feet long. The clapboards were laid like shingles and were held in place with logs placed over them. Nails were handmade and were scarce and costly. The floors were made of logs hewed on one side and then joined together. Sometimes both the French and the Americans had a kitchen built at the back of the house. If the family owned slaves, cabins were built for them back of the home. The French built their houses along the town's main street and had little or no front yard. Back of the house they had beautiful flower gardens, orchards, and vegetable gardens.

Both the French and the Americans engaged in the same pursuits to make a living. The principal occupation was farming. Prices were fairly good but it was hard to market what one had to sell. The Americans raised corn, some wheat, hogs, and cattle. Very little grain was sold owing to poor transportation, but hams and salt pork were sent by boat to New Orleans. The rivers were the only means of getting produce to market, unless one lived near a town. That is one reason why all the early settlers lived close to streams. Other reasons were water, rich soil, and timber. The roads were little more than paths, impassable in the spring and overgrown with bushes and high grass in the summer. But the early settlers, both French and American, did other things besides farming.

They hunted for wild game as deer, bear, prairie chicken, turkey, ducks, and geese. They also hunted and trapped wild animals for their furs, which could always be sold. Some became traders with the Indians, and grew wealthy. Others mined lead and sold the lead to the town merchants. Missouri lead was used in America and in Europe. Thousands of pounds of lead were mined in Missouri in what is to-day Jefferson, St. Francois, Ste. Genevieve, Madison, and Washington counties. The lead belt lay back from the Mississippi between the Meramac and Apple Creek, and was about 45 miles wide and 70 miles long. The first lead mined was taken to Fort Chartres, on the Illinois side, and later to Ste. Genevieve.

The lead was moulded in the shape of a collar and was hung across the neck of a horse. Later it was moved in two-wheeled French carts, the wheels being of solid wood sawed from a big log. They had no iron tires, so the Americans called them barefooted carts. The oldest wagon road in Missouri was from Ste. Genevieve to these lead mines. As other towns were founded they received part of the lead for shipment. Most of the furs, however, went to St. Louis.

The towns were at that time as they are to-day the centers of trade. Here were the merchants and traders. The French towns were all very much alike. Each consisted of one long street parallel with the river. On this street were built the houses. There were no separate buildings for stores. A merchant or trader kept his goods for sale in his home. These were packed in chests or boxes to be brought out and displayed to the buyer. However, there were warehouses for keeping furs, but only the big merchants had them. In the town were also mechanics, carpenters, masons, blacksmiths, gunsmiths, and furniture makers. All of these served an important place in the life of the early pioneer. Most of the furniture was homemade and was simple, consisting of a table, beds, and a few chairs. In most homes were a spinning wheel and a loom for nearly all cloth was made at home.

The gunsmith and the blacksmith were both necessary. The pioneer depended on his gun to protect him from beast and Indian, and to provide him with much of his meat and part of his furs. The gunsmith knew how to repair the pioneer's rifle. He was a busy man. The blacksmith made the few tools used by the farmer and the mechanic. These tools were heavy and crude. The principal farm tools were the hoe, spade, sickle, mattock, rake, and plow.

In religion all of the French were Catholics and so were some of the Americans. The majority of the Americans were Protestants, but the government did not permit them to have Protestant churches or ministers, or to hold service. There

the French visitors of other towns must have rejoiced in seeing again the flag of their mother country! It is said that they asked Capt. Stoddard to let the French flag stand for twenty-four hours. He consented. On the next day, the French flag was lowered and the Stars and Stripes was raised. A shout went up and Charles Gratiot, a Frenchman, called for three cheers for the American occupation. It was given in allegiance to the United States. But there were many present who did not rejoice and there were some who wept. Although they were French, they honored the mild rule of Spain. They did not dislike the United States but they and even some of the American settlers feared the change. They knew it meant taxes and service in the militia, and these they disliked. They did not rebel or protest and as best they could showed their good intentions. The majority of American settlers rejoiced. So ended the day, March 10, 1804. Missouri had become American soil. The formal part of the Louisiana Purchase had closed, but the effects will last as long as America exists and Missouri is a state.

The purchase of Louisiana is one of the greatest events in American history. It added to this country a domain from which have been formed, in whole or in part, thirteen states. To-day it is the geographical center of our nation. Its value is beyond accurate estimate. Its people are largely native born Americans, industrious, religious, and loyal. In extent it stretched from Canada on the north to Texas and the Gulf on the south, and from the Mississippi on the east to the Rockies on the west. It has been called the largest real estate transaction in history.

In Missouri history the purchase of Louisiana stands out as a land-mark. It brought about changes of the greatest importance. Missouri's government changed from Spanish to American; her schools changed from village church classes to

both private and public schools; her religion changed from an established state faith, the Catholic, to freedom of worship open alike to Catholics and Protestants; her social life changed from French to American; and her methods of doing business became American. Other changes also appeared. The American immigration begun under the latter Spanish rule now increased. American courts were established and lawyers and lawsuits became common. The American land speculator promptly put in his appearance and land booms and depressions became part of our business life. The American editor came and soon a weekly newspaper appeared. With the American system of popular self-government came elections whereby the people chose their officers and lawmakers. Other changes were soon noticed which were not good. With the thousands of new American settlers came some undesirable citizens. These lived by their wits and their fists. Crimes became more common. Fights and even murders now occurred. Drinking and gambling were prevalent in the towns. The duel also appeared. The peaceful life of the old French village had passed. Rush and hurry to develop the country, to found new towns, to make money and become wealthy now became the goal of the people. These are only some of the important changes, others will later be noticed. Most of these were improvements and they enabled Missouri to become the great state she is today.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. Explain the transfer of the Louisiana Purchase.
2. What was the attitude of the inhabitants when the formal transfer was made?
3. What is the importance of the Louisiana Purchase in American history?
4. What is the importance of the Louisiana Purchase in Missouri history?



## CHAPTER II

### MISSOURI'S STRUGGLE FOR STATEHOOD

#### THE GOVERNMENT OF MISSOURI 1804-1821

*Americans dislike laws handed down from a higher source; they will petition, demand and fight for self-government.*

#### GENERAL SURVEY OF THE TERRITORIAL PERIOD

The seventeen years of Missouri history following the Louisiana Purchase were marked by several outstanding features in the field of government. These features are important and, if remembered, they are a key to this period. In the first place, Congress by five different laws provided in general terms what Missouri's territorial government should be, and finally by two more laws Congress permitted Missourians to provide what Missouri's state government should be. These seven laws passed by Congress gradually gave Missourians more and more control over their own government until finally Missouri became a state in the Union. In the second place, as Missouri's population increased during these years and as new Missouri counties were formed, Missourians wanted less Congress-government and more self-government in Missouri. They petitioned time after time for this privilege of governing themselves and finally only statehood itself would satisfy them. This second feature may be called Missouri's struggle for statehood. It was successful only after a long and bitter fight in Congress. The third feature was closely related to the second. It was slavery. Missourians had slaves during the Spanish rule and many more slaves were brought here by the American set-

ters who came during this territorial period. When Missouri petitioned for statehood, the question arose in Congress whether Missouri should be admitted as a slave or as a free state and whether the rest of the Louisiana country should be slave or free. Only after several years of debating in Congress was this question settled. It was this slavery question which delayed Missouri in becoming a state and in entering the Union. The last feature was the framing of a state constitution and the forming of a state government by Missourians. These four features—the laws of Congress, the struggle for statehood, slavery, and Missouri's statehood—are the key to the period of government in Missouri from 1804 to 1821.

#### THE LAWS OF CONGRESS

Shortly after the purchase of the Louisiana country, Congress provided by law for its temporary government. This law was passed on October 31, 1803. It made little change in the old Spanish system of government except to place American officials in control. The old divisions of lower and upper Louisiana with their capitals at New Orleans and St. Louis were not changed. All power was given the President of the United States. He appointed Captain Amos Stoddard, of the United States Army, commandant of upper Louisiana. Captain Stoddard had all civil and military authority, subject to the President's direction. This law of 1803 went into effect in Missouri when Captain Stoddard took possession of upper Louisiana on March 10, 1804. From that day to October 1, 1804, Missouri really had a military government of occupation. This military government as was intended was only temporary. It lasted less than seven months.

After Congress had passed this temporary government law, it began considering a more permanent form of government for the Louisiana country. On March 26, 1804, a new

law was passed, which went into effect on October 1, 1804. This law of 1804 divided the Louisiana Purchase country into two parts as had the Spanish, but these two parts were now made separate and independent of each other. The boundary line between them was what is to-day the southern boundary of Arkansas. The south part was called the Territory of Orleans, and its capital was New Orleans. The north part was called the District of Louisiana. Missouri was of course part of the District of Louisiana. This District was placed under the government of the Territory of Indiana. So Missouri now was governed by the governor and judges of the Territory of Indiana, who lived in Indiana 165 miles away. It looked like Missouri was getting poor treatment from the United States. She had no voice in her own government and even those who governed her did not live here.

The people of Missouri at once protested. The law of 1804 was so unpopular that the people in the five old Spanish districts of St. Charles, St. Louis, Ste. Genevieve, Cape Girardeau, and New Madrid, elected delegates to meet in convention in St. Louis. Here a petition of protest was drafted against the act of 1804 and against the part of that act which declared that all Spanish grants of land made after 1800 were null and void. A request was then made for a separate territorial government in Missouri. It requested a governor appointed by the President and a legislative council composed of the governor and two representatives elected by the people from each of the five districts, or counties. It requested the right to have a delegate in Congress. Copies of this petition were sent to the President and Congress. Another law (unusually called "act") was passed by Congress. This was the act of 1805. It gave Missouri a separate territorial government, but of the lowest rank. It provided for a governor and three judges all appointed by the President. These four men

were to make the laws. The governor was to have a secretary, who was to be the acting governor when the office was vacant. This act of 1805 also changed the name of the District to the Territory of Louisiana. It is clear that Missouri received little except a separate government and a change of name. No delegate to Congress, no self-government, no elected officers, no repeal of the law against the Spanish land grants made after 1800, were mentioned. Still, Missourians were very well pleased with the law of 1805. It was a step forward over the laws of 1803 and 1804. Excepting the judges and the secretary, however, it provided a government somewhat similar to the old Spanish government, and that was well liked by the people.

This act of 1805 was in force seven years. Under it Missouri, as the Territory of Louisiana, had three governors. The first was General James Wilkinson. The people disliked him and the President removed him after serving two years. Captain Meriwether Lewis, a very popular man, was appointed governor. He also served only two years owing to his death in 1809. The last governor of the Territory of Louisiana was General Benjamin Howard. During these seven years another man was the acting governor much of this time, although he was only the secretary to the governor. This man was the young Virginian, Frederick Bates. He was able and popular. He later became Missouri's second state governor.

The population of Missouri increased rapidly during these seven years. In 1804 Missouri had 10,350 persons, of whom 1,500 were slaves. In 1810 Missouri had a population of 20,845. This was an increase of 100%. Missourians now sent petition on petition to Congress requesting more self-government. Early in 1812 the Territory of Orleans became the State of Louisiana. The upper Louisiana country was still called the Territory of Louisiana. There was, therefore, both a state and a territory with the same name. This was confusing and combined with the Missouri petitions for more self-

government, gave Congress good cause for passing a new law for Missouri.

This was the act of 1812. By it, the name "Territory of Missouri" was given to the Territory of Louisiana. No change was made in boundaries. But a change more important than name was made by the act of 1812. This was in government, by which Missouri was raised to a territory of the second rank. This change was in the law-making body. A legislature of two houses was created. The upper house, called the legislative council, was appointed by the President; the lower house, called the house of representatives, was elected from counties by the people. The people were to have a delegate in Congress, who was also to be elected. By this act of 1812 Missouri had gained much but not all. Her rank had been advanced and her people were to elect one of the law-making houses and a delegate to represent them in Congress. Missouri had also finally received her name.

In the act of 1812 the name "counties" was mentioned for the first time. Down to this time the five old Spanish districts had not been changed. Now they became counties. So Missouri's first five counties were St. Charles, St. Louis, Ste. Genevieve, Cape Girardeau, and New Madrid. As population increased other counties were formed until to-day Missouri has 114 counties and the city of St. Louis.

Missouri had only two governors under the act of 1812. The first was Benjamin Howard, who was also the last governor of the Territory of Louisiana. He resigned in 1813 and was succeeded by General William Clark. Governor Clark and Captain Lewis had been the leaders of the famous Lewis and Clark expedition of 1804 to the Pacific ocean. Each became our governor. Clark was an able man, especially in handling the Indians. They called him "Red Head," and they feared and respected him.

The act of 1812 was in force eight years, or until 1820. During these eight years Missouri had three delegates in Con-

gress. The first was Edward Hempstead, the second Rufus Eastin, and the last John Scott. All were lawyers and represented Missouri well in Congress. Scott later became Missouri's first congressman when Missouri became a state.

The War of 1812 brought Missouri trouble from the Indians. It also decreased immigration to Missouri, although it did not entirely stop new settlers coming here. When the war closed and peace was made in 1815, Missouri's population again increased by thousands. Missouri now wanted more self-government and Congress passed another law. This was the act of 1816.

By this act the legislative council was made elective. This gave Missourians control of their territorial legislature in both houses. The governor and judges were still appointed by the President. Missouri had now risen to the third or highest grade of territorial government. Only statehood itself would give her complete self-government. This she now sought.

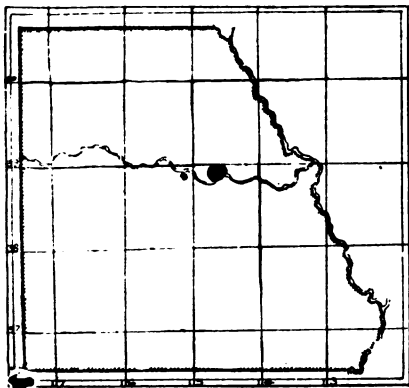
#### MISSOURI'S STRUGGLE FOR STATEHOOD

Although Missourians began asking Congress for self-government as early as 1804, they did not begin forcing to the front the question of absolute self-government, or statehood, until 1817. In this year they circulated petitions to be sent to Congress in which was requested permission for Missouri to become a state. These petitions were presented in Congress in 1818 by Missouri's territorial delegate, John Scott. A bill permitting Missouri to form a constitution and a state government was introduced in Congress, but it did not become a law. In the fall of 1818 the Missouri Territorial Legislature petitioned Congress for statehood. Congress again took up the matter. This time a new subject was considered. It was slavery. Some of the congressmen from the northern states wanted to restrict slavery in Missouri. A few of the northern congressmen and all of the southern congressmen opposed placing any slavery restriction on Missouri. All of them knew that slavery had

always existed in Missouri but the northern congressmen wanted to see it gradually abolished before they would vote for Missouri's statehood. The southern congressmen thought that such a restriction on Missouri was unfair and illegal. They said that Missourians and not congressmen had the right to decide the question of slavery in the proposed new state. All during the winter of 1818-19 Congress debated the Missouri question back and forth. Feeling ran high over the nation.

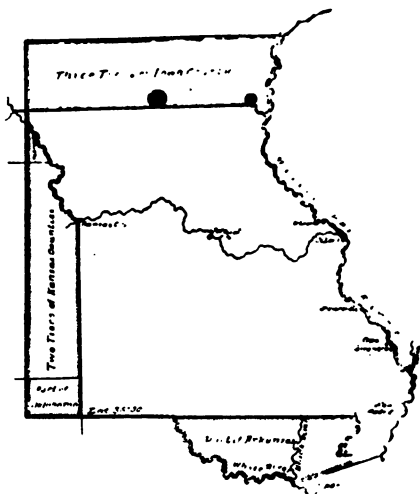
In Missouri the people were indignant and angry at the interference of Congress in attempting to impose restrictions on slavery. Public meetings were held throughout the Territory. Speeches were made. Resolutions of protest against the proposed action of Congress were adopted. The people of Missouri felt that they and they alone had the right to decide on slavery. They also felt that Congress should not delay longer in permitting Missourians to form a state constitution and a state government. Some even went so far as to threaten forming a state government in the near future if Congress did not give them permission.

When Congress met again in December 1819, the Missouri statehood bill was taken up for final settlement. The debates were just as bitter as before. Finally a compromise was agreed upon. This is known in history as the Missouri Compromise. A law was adopted on March 6, 1820, which gave Missouri permission to form a state constitution and a state government without any restriction on slavery. This is called the Missouri Enabling Act. The act of 1820 had other provisions in it. It set forth the boundaries of Missouri as they are to-day, excepting the Platte Purchase country, which was added in 1836. It gave the new state, United States public lands for public schools, a state university, and a seat of government. This act also provided, and this is the important part of the Missouri Compromise, that slavery was prohibited in all of the Louisiana Purchase country north of 36° 30' (the southern boundary of Missouri) excepting the proposed State of Missouri.



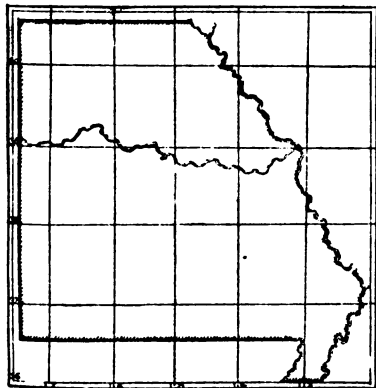
BOUNDARY OF MISSOURI AS FIRST SUGGESTED IN 1817

From Houck's *Hist. of Mo.*, I. 3.



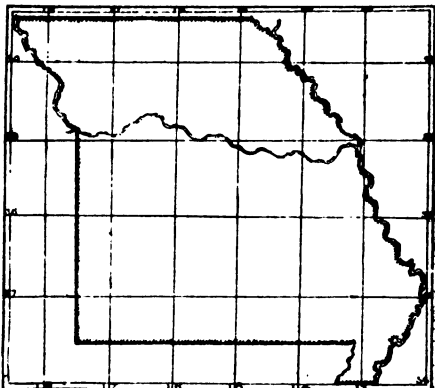
BOUNDARY OF MISSOURI AS SUGGESTED BY THE TERRITORIAL LEGISLATURE IN 1818.

From Houck's *Hist. of Mo.*, I. 5



BOUNDARY OF MISSOURI AS ADOPTED BY CONGRESS IN 1820.

From Houck's *Hist. of Mo.*, I. 6.



BOUNDARY OF MISSOURI WITH THE PLATTE PURCHASE ADDED.

From Houck's *Hist. of Mo.*, I. 12.

BOUNDARIES OF MISSOURI



## THE NEWS REACHES MISSOURI

The Missouri Enabling Act was passed on March 6, 1820. On March 21st a special messenger from Washington reached Jackson, Missouri, and four days later he entered St. Louis. Missouri was now to become a state. Self-government had finally won. The day and night were given over to celebration. Candles were lighted and placed in the front windows. St. Louis was celebrating in true pioneer style. Over the territory the news spread. It was a joyous time in old Missouri. The *St. Louis Enquirer*, the second newspaper in Missouri, issued an extra.

## THE FIRST STATE CONSTITUTION, 1820

An election was called in May to elect delegates to a constitutional convention. Forty-one of Missouri's most eminent men were selected. These have been called "The Fathers of the State." They met in St. Louis on June 12, 1820, and adjourned on July 19th. In the dining room of the old Mansion House Hotel in St. Louis a constitution was framed and adopted. Thus, Missouri, the State, was born in a tavern. The constitution was similar to the constitutions of Kentucky and Illinois. It was never submitted to the people. It served Missouri for forty-five years.

Missouri's first constitution was a strong one. It was brief, containing only about nine thousand words. Missouri's present constitution has about thirty thousand words. The former laid down only general principles of government and did not go into details. The government it provided for Missouri was similar to our present state government except that the judges and a number of officials were to be appointed instead of elected and that the legislature had more powers. The total cost of this constitution, including pay of the delegates, was only \$8,000. These forty-one "Fathers of the State" did their work well.



DAVID BARTON

Some of these forty-one delegates were truly remarkable men. Among them were men who became United States senators, governors, and state supreme court judges. The president of the convention was David Barton, an able lawyer and orator. He was one of Missouri's first United States senators. Other men who became well known and who did most to frame the constitution were John Rice Jones, Duff Green, Edward Bates, Henry Dodge, John D. Cook, Jonathan S. Findlay, Alexander McNair, and John Scott.

#### THE FIRST STATE ELECTION, AUGUST 1820

After the constitution was adopted, an election was ordered for electing a congressman, governor, lieutenant governor, state senators, and representatives. This election was held in August. The campaign was spirited. The newspapers carried campaign articles and the men running for office made speeches. Alexander McNair, of St. Louis, was elected governor; William H. Ashley, lieutenant governor; and John Scott, congressman. There were no opposing political parties. Each voted for the man he liked best. Political parties came later in Missouri.

#### THE FIRST STATE GOVERNMENT, 1820

In September the General Assembly of Missouri (the legislature) met in St. Louis in the Missouri Hotel. Governor McNair and Lieutenant Governor Ashley took the oath of office. One of the most important things to do was to elect Missouri's two United States senators. In those days the Legislature did this. David Barton and Thomas H. Benton were elected. Barton was popular and he was easily elected. He worked hard for Benton. Although Benton became Missouri's greatest senator and statesman, his first election was close. One of his supporters in the Legislature was Daniel Ralls, who was sick in his room. When the votes were being cast four stout negroes carried Ralls on his bed into the legis-



MANSION HOUSE HOTEL, ST. LOUIS — WHERE THE FIRST CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION MET



THE MISSOURI HOTEL, ST. LOUIS — WHERE THE FIRST STATE LEGISLATURE MET



TEMPORARY CAPITOL AT ST. CHARLES, MO., IN USE TILL 1826



STATE CAPITOL BUILT IN 1837-8 FIRST ON CAPITOL HILL, JEFFERSON CITY



CAPITOL AS REMODELED IN 1897-8



PRESENT STATE CAPITOL

CHAPMAN

lative hall. Ralls cast his vote for Benton and died shortly after. In his honor Ralls county was named.

At this session of the Legislature a number of laws were made among which was one regarding the seat of government, or the capital of Missouri. St. Charles was made the temporary capital until 1826. The permanent capital was to be located by a commission and was to be somewhere within forty miles of the mouth of the Osage river. What is to-day Jefferson City was finally selected. State officers and judges were appointed by Governor McNair and were approved by the Senate, taxes were provided for, and laws relating to different matters were passed. Early in December 1820 the Legislature adjourned. The old territorial government had passed away and the new state government was in operation. Missouri with her 66,000 people was a state in all respects except one—she had not yet been admitted by Congress into the Union. This was not done until August 10, 1821, a year and twenty-two days after Missouri had adopted her first State Constitution.

#### ADMISSION INTO THE UNION, AUGUST 10, 1821

When John Scott, David Barton and Thomas Benton, Missouri's congressman and two United States senators, arrived in Washington, they expected to take their seats as representatives of the State of Missouri. They were told that the old Missouri question was again smouldering and for them to wait until it was settled. This time Congress, or rather part of Congress, found fault with Missouri's constitution. It contained a clause commanding the Legislature to pass laws preventing free negroes from coming into Missouri. This clause was denounced by some congressmen as contrary to the Constitution of the United States. Again there was bitter debating. Finally, Henry Clay, of Kentucky, effected a compromise. Congress passed a law in 1821 on the matter. This law provided that when the Missouri Legislature by a solemn pub-

lic act stated that it would not enforce this clause in the constitution so as to deprive United States citizens of their rights and would send a copy of this solemn public act to the President, then the President could admit Missouri into the Union by proclamation.

The Missouri Legislature met in special session in June 1821 in St. Charles. It passed the solemn public act and sent a copy to the President of the United States, James Monroe. On August 10, 1821, President Monroe issued a proclamation admitting Missouri into the Union as the twenty-fourth state. Missouri's struggle for statehood had ended. Before this, however, Scott, Barton, and Benton had already taken their seats in Congress and all three drew their pay from the beginning of that session of Congress. The solemn public act of the Missouri Legislature was not legally binding, since no legislature can say what another legislature may or may not do. The constitution of Missouri governs the legislature.

### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. What were the four outstanding features in Missouri history following the Louisiana Purchase?
2. Compare the temporary military government in 1804 with the new law which was passed in 1804.
3. What did the people ask in their protest?
4. To what extent did Congress meet their demands?
5. Who were the three governors of the Territory of Louisiana?
6. State the increase of population during these seven years?
7. What do you understand by the "Territory of Missouri?"
8. Trace the steps in self government in the Missouri territory from 1805 to 1816.
9. When the Territory of Missouri petitioned Congress for statehood what great issue arose?
10. What were the provisions of the Missouri Enabling Act?
11. After the passage of the Missouri Enabling Act what was Missouri's first need?
12. How did the adoption of the constitution of 1820 differ from the adoption of a present constitution?

13. Briefly compare the constitution of 1820 with our present constitution.
14. Describe the personnel of the first constitutional convention.
15. Contrast the election of 1820 with a present day election.
16. How did the election of Missouri's first United States senators differ from the election of her senators to-day?
17. Explain the selection of Missouri's permanent capital.
18. What was the solemn public act?

## CHAPTER III

### LIFE OF THE PEOPLE, 1804-1821

#### POPULATION AND SETTLEMENTS

The territorial period of Missouri's history brought changes more important than those in government. Some of these changes had their beginning when the Americans came during the latter Spanish period. The territorial period simply gave opportunity for their more rapid growth. Such, for example, were the increase in population and the development of settlements. Other changes, however, were new. Among these, for example, were changes in education, religion, journalism, and transportation. Although this period may seem at first like an overturning of everything that had existed before, such was not the case. Missouri history is like a story. No part can be well understood without knowing the part before. Every chapter is connected with the whole. So during this territorial period when the foundations of our state were laid, it is seen that all present actions were related to those of the past.

This is especially clear regarding population and settlements. In 1804 Missouri's population was about 10,000 of which 1,500 were slaves. In 1820 Missouri had increased to 66,000 of which 10,000 were slaves. It was this large increase which gave reason to Missouri's request for statehood. Where did these thousands of new settlers come from? They came principally from Kentucky, Virginia, Maryland, the two Carolinas, and Tennessee. Some came from southern Illinois, Indiana, and Ohio; some from Pennsylvania; and a few from New York and the New England states. The large majority, however, came from the southern states mentioned, and they brought with them their slaves. While in 1804 Missouri's white population was about half French and half American, in



1820 there were seven or eight Americans to every Frenchman. Although this shows a remarkable American immigration to Missouri, the real beginning of this dates from 1795. What brought these thousands of American settlers to Missouri? It was that which brought the first Americans—cheap land.

As population increased old settlements grew and new settlements were made. The latter took most of the new immigrants. Being Americans they pushed farther and farther into the interior, where good land in large tracts could be easily obtained. Over half of them settled along the Missouri river from St. Charles to the western border and along the Mississippi from St. Louis to the northern border. The Boone's Lick country in central Missouri around what is to-day Howard county, attracted many. Here new settlements of size appeared, the most important being Franklin, opposite Boonville. Franklin was founded in 1817 and in 1820 had a population of 1,000. It was the second largest town in Missouri. Within ten years the Missouri river washed it away. The Salt river country, north of St. Charles, attracted many. Settlements also thrived back of the Mississippi river counties south of St. Louis. Even in southwest Missouri settlers appeared, especially around Springfield. Many of the new immigrants settled in the older settlements so that all except the New Madrid district increased in population. St. Louis grew fast. Its population of 1,000 in 1804 increased to 5,000 by 1820. It was Missouri's largest and most important city.

The few old Spanish districts of St. Charles, St. Louis, Ste. Genevieve, Cape Girardeau, and New Madrid became counties in 1812. By 1821 there were twenty-five Missouri counties. All of them were along the Missouri or the Mississippi except three. These three were Washington, Madison, and Wayne, which were just back and west of the Mississippi river counties lying south of St. Louis.

Although Missouri was growing fast, she was still a pioneer district with pioneer conditions. Her settlements were

nearly all along the rivers. Her prairie sections had not been settled. In 1820 there was only one person to every square mile.

### THE NEW MADRID EARTHQUAKE, 1811-1812

The only district which decreased in population during the territorial period was the New Madrid country. This decrease was due to an earthquake which began in December 1811 and continued in severity for several months. Before this time, however, the district had not been growing fast. Much of the land was too swampy for farming. The trade with the Indians had declined when the Indians moved away. So when the earthquake came, many of the settlers were glad to leave.

The earthquake itself was the most violent and destructive natural disturbance which ever came to Missouri. Arkansas, Kentucky, Tennessee, and Missouri were effected, but the center of the shocks was in southeast Missouri. Here the earth shook violently. Some land was raised so that river beds stood above the water. Other land was lowered so that new river beds and lakes were formed. In parts of the country cracks in the earth were made seven hundred feet long and thirty feet wide. Trees were torn up and houses were wrecked. Well did the poor settler call it "The Big Shake". Many homes were ruined and much land made useless for farming. Certainly, the people had reason for their terror and fright. Many decided to seek new homes. Some had little left and their condition was desperate.

Relief came but too late to help most of the real sufferers. Congress in 1816 passed a law permitting those having damaged New Madrid land to exchange it for an equal amount of public land elsewhere. All that was necessary was to make claim and show title to damaged land. Congress had been liberal but it had been too slow. Many had already sold their damaged land for almost nothing. Even after the law was passed, speculators got most of its benefit by buying the claims

from ignorant holders. Many of the New Madrid people settled on public land in the Boone's Lick country and around St. Louis. The New Madrid district was long retarded in growth by the effects of this earthquake. To-day great improvement is being made by draining the land. Most of the soil is very fertile, and grows large yields of cotton, corn, or wheat.

#### INDIAN TROUBLES AND THE WAR OF 1812

Although Missouri never had big wars with the Indians, she suffered much from Indian attacks. As late as 1812 Missouri's settlers feared to make homes very far from the older settlements because of attacks and thefts by roving bands of Indians. A few settlers had gone as far north as what is to-day Hannibal and as far west, up the Missouri river, as the Boone's Lick country. Two sons of Daniel Boone had boiled salt in Howard county and on their return had told of the fine country in central Missouri. Benjamin Cooper led a few settlers to the new district and by 1812 there were several hundred. Then came the War of 1812 between England and the United States. England tried to arouse the Indians, giving them presents, guns, and ammunition. She did this both east and west of the Mississippi. The Indians on the east side went on the war-path, but, fortunately for Missouri, only a few of the Indians on the west side waged war. These were the Sacs and Foxes, Missouris, and Miamis (a small tribe) in north Missouri. Even these were not organized under one leader but fought in separate bands.

The old Missouri settlements were in no danger, but the frontier settlers widely scattered up the Mississippi and the Missouri were in daily peril. They built small two-story forts of heavy logs and made loop-holes for their rifles. Sometimes they built a heavy log fence, called a stockade, around the fort and several cabins. The settlers continued to farm but they carried their rifles with them. On news of Indians, they hur-

ried to the fort. Some settlers were killed, however, and many homes were destroyed and much property stolen. Conditions were so dangerous that immigration stopped to these frontier settlements. The Missouri militia was called out. General Henry Dodge of Ste. Genevieve led part of the militia to cen-



SURRENDER OF THE MIAMIS TO GEN. DODGE

tral Missouri and forced the Miamis to surrender. The Delawares and the Shawnees in southeast Missouri, unlike the other Indians, helped the whites. When the war closed in 1814, the Indian attacks ended.

This Indian warfare against the whites was caused not only by English persuasion but more largely by the Indian's hatred of the white settler taking up land. The Indian frequently owned this land and had never given it to the whites by treaty. To settle this matter, a big meeting was held near St. Charles in June, 1815, between Governor William Clark

and the Indians. The Sacs and Foxes, who had given the most trouble, gave up part of their Missouri land, and the Osages gave up nearly all of their Missouri land. Other treaties were made later until in 1833 the Indian title was extinguished in Missouri except in the Platte country, which was ceded in 1836.

### THE ECONOMIC LIFE OF THE PEOPLE, 1804-1821

Men make a living in different ways. Some produce food, they are called farmers. Some produce metals, they are called miners. Others make things to use, they are called artisans or skilled workman like the carpenter, shoemaker, or blacksmith. Others buy and sell things or trade one thing for another, they are called merchants or traders. Bankers are men who trade only in credit and money. Then there are men who make a living by giving you advice and instruction, as the doctor, lawyer, preacher, and teacher. Such men are called professional men. These ways of making a living relate to the economic life of a people. Man could not exist without the things which concern his economic life. To know the history of Missourians it is necessary to know their economic life.

During the French and Spanish periods of Missouri history, the economic life of our people was simple although just as important as it was later. It was simple in relating to very few things. Men farmed, mined lead, boiled salt, hunted and trapped wild animals for food and furs, and traded with the Indians for furs. This was their economic life. Each part of this life was simple. Man farmed to produce food for his family and not to sell to others. Men mined lead by digging shallow holes and melting the ore by an open wood fire. Wild animals close at home were trapped for furs, for Missouri was a wilderness. Indians brought their furs down stream to the Mississippi river settlements and there traded them for the things they needed or wanted. Everything was simple. As population increased, this simple economic life be-

gan to change. Some of these changes were seen during the territorial period.

Farming which was the main industry grew fast. The majority of the new settlers were farmers. Being Americans they had large farms, from which it was easy to raise more grain and live stock than was needed. Each farmer needed such articles as tools, harness, and certain household necessities. He traded his farm products for these. The slaves in Missouri in 1804 numbered 1,500; in 1820 they numbered over 10,000. This meant more workers. Their owners were farmers who lived better than the small farmers. They also produced more on the farm than they needed and so they bought more for their homes. The success of the farmers meant success for the people in town as the merchant, artisan, and professional man. The farmer's main trouble was transportation. He still depended on the streams and used the flat boat and other kinds of boats for getting to and from market. When the steamboat came, it was a great improvement. Even before this, however, roads were being built. Gradually the farmer was getting in closer touch with the outside world.

The settling of the country and the success of the farmer, meant the growth of old towns and the founding of new towns. Here were the stores and shops, the merchants and the traders. The merchants increased in number. Some of them were wealthy. In St. Louis the French, although out-numbered by the Americans, were still the leaders in business. They were also the wealthiest class. The American ways of doing business were being adopted. Both French and English were spoken on the streets of St. Louis. In the interior towns like Franklin, the merchants were all Americans and spoke only English. The stores carried a variety of goods including hardware, dry goods, drugs, and groceries. The main articles sold were guns, shot, and powder; traps, and tools; calicoes and thin cloth for dresses; quinine, calomel, and patent medicines; salt, sugar, coffee, tea, and spices. The main things bought

from the farmer and trapper were beeswax and honey; cured meats and salt pork; butter and lard; hides and tallow; wheat and some vegetables. Prices were high for goods but were never more than fair for what the farmer sold. In times of boom and prosperity, the farmer received much more for his produce than in times of depressions and panic. This was also true of farm land and town property.

Beginning in 1804 Missouri had about 14 years of prosperity. These were boom times. Land near the old settlements rose in value to \$8 an acre before the War of 1812. During the war, there was no immigration and land prices stood still. After peace was declared, immigration again set in and from 1815 to 1818 Missouri had a boom that sent land as high as \$10 an acre. Then came the depression and hard times in 1819. Land prices went down over 50% and land sold lower than it had ten years before. There was still plenty of land to be purchased at \$1.25 an acre but this land lay at some distance beyond or back from the settlements. As it became settled it rose in price according to location and soil. There were land speculators in those days. They helped to make the boom and they also helped to make hard times. Many bought land cheap and sold at high prices. They became wealthy. Others thinking that land prices would go higher, paid too much and lost everything.

There was little metal money in those days and people did not need much. Furs were used as money at the trading posts, a beaver or a deer skin being used in place of money. Lead and tobacco were also used. Nearly all business was done by barter or exchange. A farmer would sell a dozen cured hams to a merchant and take it out in sugar or other merchandise. Business was carried on this way. Taxes and land had to be paid for in money, but taxes were low and government land was cheap. There were some Spanish silver dollars in circulation and these were cut in halves, quarters, and eighths. An eighth part, or  $12\frac{1}{2}$  cents, was called a "bit."



THE PUZZLED WITNESS, BY BINGHAM



A quarter, or 25 cents, was called "two bits." Although the people usually did not need much money, in hard times they felt the need badly. Later when business grew and the State became more widely settled, the need for more money was greater.

There were no banks until the latter half of the territorial period. Two were organized in St. Louis, the center of Missouri's trade and business. Both of these failed, the last in 1822. Missouri did not have another bank of her own until 1837 when the State itself established one. Both of the early St. Louis banks were formed during the post-war boom times when prices were high and people were speculating. These banks issued paper money which they promised to pay in coin. They also loaned money. When the panic of 1819 came the banks could not get their borrowers to pay back these loans and the banks could not, therefore, get coin to pay for its own paper money. Everybody needed money to pay debts and taxes, but nobody could get money for the things he sold. Many people lost their property. The two banks failed because they were caught in the decline of prices.

Not only did farmers and merchants increase during these years, and bankers appear, but Missouri also saw professional men settling here. Among these were lawyers, doctors, surveyors, preachers, and teachers. Before this Missouri had a few professional men including priests but no Protestant preachers, and perhaps only one or two lawyers and teachers. Many of these now appeared. An American lawyer could be found in any town and in St. Louis by 1821 there were over a score. Most of these were able men who knew the law. There were many lawsuits and these gave employment to the lawyers. They also became politicians and soon controlled the public offices. There were not yet many doctors or teachers, but surveyors and preachers increased. Both preachers and teachers were poorly paid, and most of the preachers received little

more than their living. All of these professional men did great service. Their life was hard and few of them were slackers.

The Americans brought the hotel to Missouri. These hotels were called taverns. They were found in every town and served both bed and board and old time hospitality at a reasonable price. The tavern keeper was a man of wide acquaintance and experience. Many are the stories told of these old taverns. Some of these taverns became noted over Missouri and one at Arrow Rock in Saline county has been preserved to this day because of its interesting history.

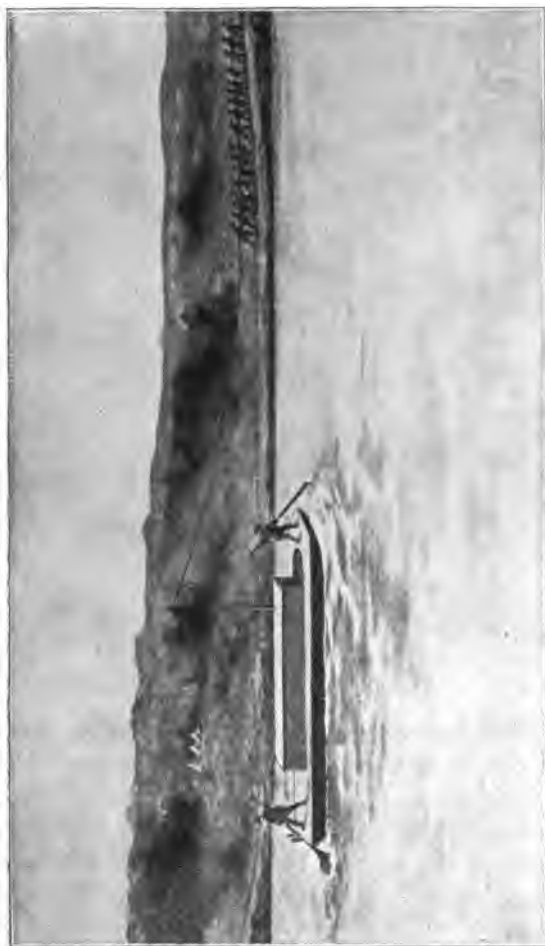
Another industry that grew rapidly at this time was lead mining. The old mines were better worked and new ones were opened. Hundreds of thousands of pounds of lead were mined. The Americans adopted new methods for melting the lead and built more modern furnaces. Some of the lead used by the United States in the War of 1812 was mined here and the famous battle of New Orleans was won with Missouri lead. It has been said that even in the Revolutionary War Missouri lead was used.

With the American lawyer and preacher came the journalist, or newspaper editor. The first Missouri newspaper was *The Missouri Gazette*, established in St. Louis in 1808. Its founder was Joseph Charles, a native of Ireland who had become an American. In 1817 *The St. Louis Enquirer* was established. The third paper was *The Missouri Intelligencer and Boone's Lick Advertiser* at Franklin, Missouri, founded in 1819. In 1820 two more newspapers were established in Missouri, one in St. Charles and one in Jackson. The Missouri editor played an important part in Missouri history, especially in politics and education. A free press is necessary to a free state.

Excepting farming, the greatest growth and development was in the fur business. The fur trade and the Santa Fe trade are so important and are so closely related to Missouri's explorations of the West that they will form a large part of the next chapter.

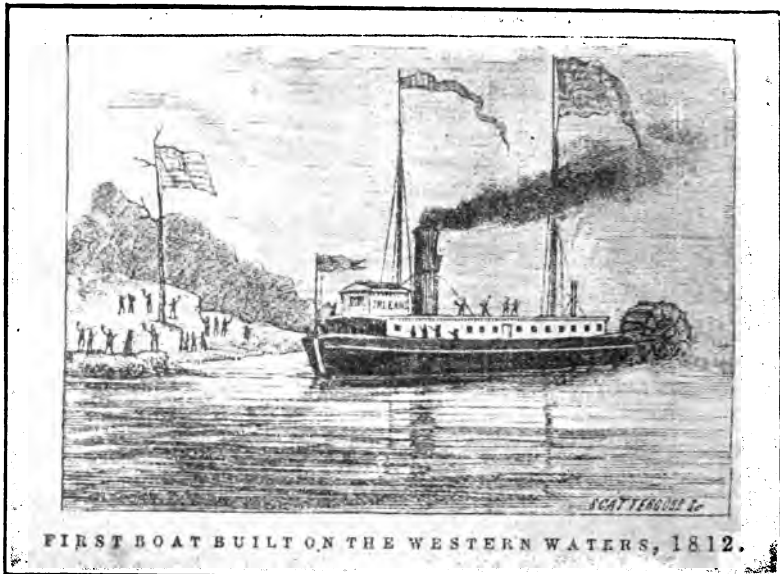
Transportation also developed and improved in Missouri during these years. The government established post roads for the mail. There were laid out to connect all the settlements. They were improvements over the old forest trails. The greatest improvement, however, was on water. This was the coming of the steamboat in 1817. Before this, river transportation had been by canoe, mackinaw or flatboat, bull boat, and keel boat. The canoe was usually hollowed out of a cottonwood log. The bull boat was larger than the canoe and was made of buffalo bull hides sewed and stretched over a willow frame, the seams being filled with tallow. Being light and large it was the best boat for shallow streams and could be propelled either by oars or poles. The flat boat was made of timber. Its ends were not pointed and its bottom was flat. Oars and poles were used with it. For down-stream transportation it was good but not for up-stream. The mackinaw was similar to the flat boat but it had pointed ends. The keel boat was the largest boat and carried large cargoes. Oars and poles were used with it and in addition sails and cordelle. The cordelle was a long rope. One end was tied to the top of a mast on the boat. Men on shore took the other end and pulled the boat up-stream. It moved fast down-stream but up-stream it averaged only fifteen miles a day. Down-stream the cordelle was not used. The keel boat was used even after the steamboat came. The keel boats were usually made in Pittsburg and cost between \$2,000 and \$3,000.

The steamboat was to the river what the railroad was to the land. It provided cheaper and quicker transportation. The first steamboat reached St. Louis in 1817. It was called the Zebulon M. Pike, after the famous explorer. Two years later the steamboat, Independence, went up the Missouri river as far as Franklin. Steamboat traffic on both rivers had now begun. It made travel easier and quicker. It helped greatly to develop the country along the rivers. It also carried to market the trapper's furs, the farmer's cattle and grain, and



KEEL BOAT AND CORDELLE

the merchant's goods. For fifty years the steamboat on water and the wagon on land were the two great means of transportation in Missouri.



### SOCIAL, EDUCATIONAL AND RELIGIOUS LIFE OF THE PEOPLE, 1804-1821

The social life of the people changed during this period. Some of the changes were bad and some were good. This was partly because criminals and rough men came to Missouri as well as settlers. The easy life in the old French villages passed. During the Spanish rule strict order had been maintained. Now order was relaxed. The sale of liquor was allowed without restriction in tavern and store. Gambling was common and open. Profanity was also common. Sunday was little observed. It was the best trading day of the week. It also was a day of amusement. Nearly every man went

armed with either pistol or knife. Fighting was common among the lower classes and duels among the professional classes. The Indians were frequently mistreated and they in



WORSHIP IN THE WOODS

turn took revenge on the whites. Speculation prevailed among all classes. This was the bad side of the picture.

Changes for the better were also present. Educated and cultured men and women were also among the new settlers, and the majority were peaceable, honest, and industrious. The professional classes increased and added their influence and service toward improving conditions. The preachers and teachers devoted their lives to their work. Private schools

and a college were established. St. Louis College (later St. Louis University) was founded by the Catholics in 1819. This was the first college in Missouri. Many more came later in the '30s and '40s. Provision had also been made for a public school system in St. Louis. Religious denominations firmly established themselves here; the Catholics already had a strong position. Among the Protestants the Baptists, Congregationalists, Episcopalians, Methodists, and Presbyterians were the first in Missouri to build churches and hold services. Even a public library was founded in St. Louis, and some citizens who had private libraries were kind enough to lend books. The helpful influence of the newspapers was important. The people received education from these as well as political news. Another improvement was the postal or mail service. Post-routes were laid out over the state and post-offices were opened. Deliveries of mail were made once a week, sometimes only once in two weeks. During the Spanish period the people did not have a public mail service. Now they could receive letters and papers from other settlements and also from the eastern states. This was a great step forward. All of the good changes had their effect in helping Missouri. They increased in influence, while many of the bad changes gradually lost in influence. A progressive state of educated and peaceful people could not be made in a day. At first it looked as if the bad elements and the bad habits would overpower the good, but as time went on the honest and industrious citizens got control. This was what happened in Missouri. Just as our people progressed in their economic life, conquering the wilderness, settling the State, and increasing in wealth, so did they progress in their social life in establishing churches and schools.

## SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. State the increase in Missouri's population from 1804 to 1820.
2. What change in location of settlements came with the great American immigration?
3. Trace the growth of counties to 1821.
4. What was the effect of the New Madrid earthquake?
5. What was the effect of the Indian troubles in the War of 1812 upon the pioneer settlements?
6. Show how Indian titles were gradually extinguished in Missouri.
7. Show how and why with the growth of the farming industry in Missouri came an increase in the number of towns.
8. Explain the financial boom following the War of 1812.
9. What was the principal medium of exchange at this time?
10. Give an account of the first banks in Missouri.
11. Trace the progress that has been made in transportation.



## CHAPTER IV

### MISSOURIANS THE TRAIL MAKERS AND TRADERS OF THE WEST, 1804-1843

*"Missouri was the Pathfinder of the West."*

#### WHAT THE MISSOURI-FRENCH DID BEFORE 1804

During the French and Spanish periods of Missouri history three purposes relating to western trade and commerce outside of Missouri had been more or less kept in view. The first purpose was the old idea of finding a water route to the Pacific ocean. This was not a foolish idea. If such a route could be found, it meant a short cut for trading with China and India as well as with the Spanish settlements in California. This short cut would be profitable. After it was learned that the Mississippi was not such a route, many thought the Missouri might prove to be. French expeditions went farther and farther up the Missouri until as early as 1734 explorers had reached the country of the Dakotas. No further progress was made, although the Indians said that only a short distance beyond the source of the Missouri was another river which flowed westward to the ocean. The story of the Indians was remembered but no one down to 1804 tried to prove it. In the meantime the tributaries of the Missouri, especially in Missouri to the south, were well known and by 1804 all had been traversed.

The second purpose was also an old one but not so old as the first. This was the plan of trading with the people of Santa Fe. These people were Spaniards and Indians, to-day called Mexicans. They had furs, mules, and silver to trade. As early as 1703 twenty Canadian-French left Illinois for Santa Fe. Later De Bourgmont, founder of Fort Orleans, on his expedition to where Kansas City now stands hoped to get

in touch with the Spaniards. In 1839 the Mallet brothers reached Santa Fe by way of the Platte. The Santa Fe trade had begun. The routes were by way of the Platte through Nebraska, then south, then by way of the Arkansas, and then south. The hostile Indians made this trade dangerous. Although the trade was small compared to its great size after Missouri became a state, still it marked a beginning and should be remembered. Both Missouri and New Mexico were at this time under Spanish officials. Efforts were made both at Santa Fe and St. Louis to establish trading relations. In 1792 the Spanish governor at Santa Fe sent a man, named Vial, to open a direct route to St. Louis. Vial did this and his route was practically the same as the Santa Fe Trail followed in 1821.

The third purpose, relating to western trade outside Missouri before 1804, developed last. This plan was to extend the fur trade. The reason it developed last was because Missouri for years furnished plenty of furs for traders and trappers. Missouri was rich in fur-bearing animals. Gradually the best fur animals in Missouri began to get scarce. If the fur trade was to continue profitable, it was necessary to open new fur territory. The Arkansas field was entered. The individual trader or trapper could not with safety go into new lands peopled with dangerous savages. So, in 1794 the Spanish lieutenant governor of Missouri, Trudeau, and others formed The Missouri Trading Company. This company was not a success.

The Osages in western Missouri and eastern Kansas had a good fur territory but were giving trouble. The Spanish lieutenant governor gave Auguste Chouteau permission to build a fort on the Osage river. As a result Fort Carondelet in Vernon county, Missouri, was erected. Soon a big fur trade developed.

Another man, a Spaniard named Manuel Lisa, was also given permission to trade with the Osages. This was in 1802.

Lisa was a rival of Chouteau, so Chouteau persuaded some of the Osages to move to Arkansas where he also had permission to trade. Lisa was an able and shrewd man, and although he had failures he never gave up. The question with him now was where to find a new fur country. When Lewis and Clark returned from the West in 1806, Lisa at once saw that they had solved his problem. The upper Missouri country was the new fur land.

THE UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT POINTS THE WAY,  
1804-1819

The Lewis and Clark expedition was the first of four important explorations parties which the United States government directed to learn more about this western country. Each started from St. Louis and each had Missourians in the party.

The Lewis and Clark expedition was to explore the upper Missouri, cross the Rocky mountains, and reach the Pacific. It was to record all important things regarding the new country as rivers, Indians, animals, and climate. The leaders were Meriwether Lewis, of Virginia, and William Clark, of Kentucky. Both later became territorial governors of Missouri. The expedition left St. Louis in the spring of 1804. It followed the Missouri to its upper waters in Montana, crossed the mountains, and followed the Columbia river to the Pacific.

The results of this expedition were many. It opened up the northwest to the trader and trapper. It gave the United States a claim to this northwest country lying beyond the Louisiana Purchase. It settled the question of the water route to the Pacific. The people now had some idea of the vast country lying between the Mississippi and the Pacific. One of the first results, however, was to open up a new fur country to Missourians. The upper Missouri country in the Dakotas and Montana and even beyond were soon to see the Missouri fur trader and trapper.



PRESIDENT JEFFERSON CONGRATULATES  
LEWIS AND CLARK

In 1805 the Government sent another expedition from St. Louis to explore the upper Mississippi. Its commander was Zebulon M. Pike. It went up the Mississippi to what is now Minnesota and explored carefully the source of that river. Like the Lewis and Clark expedition, a careful record was kept of everything.

So well had Pike performed his work that the Government sent him with another expedition in 1806. Pike's second expedition was directly west across the plains to the Rocky mountains. He was instructed to explore the western and southwestern part of the Louisiana Purchase. He went up the Missouri and the Osage, then by land westward along the Arkansas to the Rocky mountains. In Colorado, Pike discovered the famous peak which bears his name. He traveled south into New Mexico and was captured by the Spaniards in 1807. He was taken a prisoner to Santa Fe and then to old Mexico. Finally, he was released. On his return he told of the great plains and mountains and rivers he had seen, of the fur bearing country to the west, and of the fine opportunity for trade with the Spaniards and Mexicans. He said that the route from Missouri to Santa Fe could be traveled. Missouri traders were soon to pour into the country which Pike had explored. Another fur region had been opened. In his account of his trip, he called the country lying west of Missouri "The Great American Desert". From that time down to 1850 all the geographies of the United States called the land west of Missouri by that name.

The last expedition of this period left St. Louis in 1819. Its leader was Stephen H. Long. Unlike the others, it went up the Missouri in a steamboat. This steamboat, called the "Western Emigrant", was the second on the Missouri. At one end of the boat was a painted wooden serpent. Through the serpent's mouth was run the steam exhaust. This greatly frightened the Indians who thought it was a demon. On reaching Nebraska, Long followed the South Platte river to

the mountains. He explored new country and discovered Long's Peak. He then reached the Arkansas and returned.

"The Great American Desert" idea did much to delay the settling of Kansas, Nebraska, and the Dakotas. People read that the country had a bad climate, sterile soil, little or no water, buffalo, and hostile Indians. Long said that it would always be a desert unfit for white people. Lewis and Clark and Pike had also said this, so nobody thought of making this country his home. For years everybody thought that Missouri would be the most western state. As a result many settled here who might have gone farther west had they known of the fertile land beyond.

The good which came from these explorers is clear. They not only explored a new country but they did it in an accurate way. Their records showed the Missouri fur trader and trapper that a rich field awaited him. From now on the fur trade and the Santa Fe trade grew by leaps and bounds until Missourians were found in every part of the West, Northwest, and Southwest. The Missouri, Columbia, Colorado, Arkansas, Red, and Mississippi rivers were now open to trade.

#### THE FUR TRADE, 1804-1860

For the next half century the fur trade of Missourians grew larger and larger. Therefore, it did much to make St. Louis and to develop Missouri. Together with lead mining it ranked next to agriculture in importance. It was largely because of the money Missourians received from furs, lead, and the Santa Fe trade, that our people did not suffer like others during panics. The fur trade during these years differed in two respects from the fur trade during the Spanish period. The trade was now largely carried on by organized companies, although there still were many individual traders. These companies could do things that the small trader could not do. A bad trip or two ruined an individual, but a company of wealthy men could stand such a loss. The second difference

17817A

was the great extent of country covered. Not only Missouri and Arkansas but all to the west, northwest and southwest, even to the Pacific, became trapping ground. Thousands of white men as well as the Indians were now gathering furs over an area half as large as the entire United States. Part of the trade went to the big English fur companies, especially in the Northwest, but Missouri received the bulk and St. Louis became the raw fur center of the world. It is not too much to say that St. Louis was founded on furs.

The first fur company in Missouri was the Missouri Trading Company founded about 1794 during the Spanish period. It was not a success either on the upper Mississippi or the upper Missouri. It built only temporary forts or stations in the fur country and the Indians could easily destroy them. Again, it sold its goods too high. As a result, the Indians traded with the English, who had cheaper goods. When Louisiana became part of the United States the trader himself could get his goods cheaper and hence he could sell cheaper.

During the period from 1804 to 1860, there were four large fur companies operating from Missouri. When Lewis and Clark in 1806 described the country they had explored, the Spanish fur trader Manuel Lisa at once saw an opportunity to develop a rich fur trade on the upper Missouri. In 1807 he made his first expedition there. Instead of building temporary forts, he built permanent forts, which he kept open for trading. On his return to St. Louis he organized the Missouri Fur Company. This was in 1808, the same year that Joseph Charless founded Missouri's first newspaper, *The Missouri Gazette*. Both the company and the newspaper did much for Missouri. Although Charless was an Irishman and Lisa was a Spaniard, they were much alike in one thing—both were fighters and neither admitted defeat.

The Missouri Fur Company had bad luck at first. The Blackfeet Indians of Montana fought it bitterly and successfully. In 1812 the Company was re-organized, and Lisa be-

came the principal member. It became more prosperous after the war but declined again on the death of Lisa in 1820. Ten years later the company disbanded. It did a great work on the upper Missouri and for two decades was the most important fur company in St. Louis. Lisa was its soul. So active was this man that in thirteen years he made at least twelve trips up the Missouri, and no trip was less than 670 miles.

Two years after the death of Lisa, the second great Missouri fur company was founded in St. Louis. This was the Rocky Mountain Fur Company. Its leader was William Henry Ashley, who became one of the most successful fur traders in our history. Around him were such noted traders and trappers as Andrew Henry, Jedediah S. Smith, William L. Sublett, and Jim Bridger. This company lived only twelve years, from 1822 to 1834, but during this time it accomplished much.

The first two expeditions, which went to the upper Missouri in the Yellowstone country, were failures because of Indian attacks. It now gave up the Missouri river trade. In 1824 a band of Ashley's men went up the Platte to the Rockies, then through the South Pass in Wyoming into the great Utah Basin around Great Salt Lake. Here was a new territory, rich in furs and never before touched by a fur company. Ashley decided to abandon Lisa's idea of permanent trading posts because of the expense and danger. He adopted the new idea of having all the trappers meet him once a year at a set place, or rendezvous. Here he collected the furs and shipped them to St. Louis. Ashley did another new thing. Since he did not have rivers all the way to carry his furs and since the Platte river was too shallow for boats, Ashley adopted the horse and mule pack trains. From now on the Rocky Mountain Fur Company was successful and Ashley became wealthy. In 1825 he opened a shorter route to the Utah Basin, called the Platte river trail. About 1830 he sold out to Jedediah Smith and two of his former partners.





MISSOURI PACK TRAIN

Ashley had lived in Missouri since 1802. He was a native of Virginia. During the territorial period he took an active part in various businesses. In 1820 he was elected Missouri's first lieutenant governor and in 1822 was head of the Missouri militia. After retiring wealthy from the fur business, he went into politics, where he did great service. Although he was a Whig and most Missourians were Democrats, Ashley was our congressman from 1831 to 1836. He died in 1839 and his grave is in Cooper county.

Jedediah Smith, who was prominent in The Rocky Mountain Fur Company, also did much for the West. He determined to find a new overland route to the Pacific. In 1826 he found a southwest route over the Rockies, down Virgin river and across the Mojave Desert to San Diego, in southern California. He returned by way of Nevada. Two years later he led another party to California and then traveled by land north to the Columbia river. There is little wonder that a company of such daring men succeeded.

This company was remarkable in other ways than the methods it used to gather and transport furs. It explored the Rocky Mountains from Colorado west, northwest, and southwest to the Pacific. It discovered Great Salt Lake and the South Pass over the Rockies. It opened the Platte river trail to Great Salt Lake, the trail from Great Salt Lake to San Diego, and several other western routes. It was the first to cross the Sierras, the deserts of Utah and Nevada, and to travel by land from California to the Columbia. It trained scores of men who later became valuable as scouts and guides to the exploring parties and armies sent out by the United States government. By its activity it opened the richest fur district in America. This was done in the short time of twelve years.

The third fur company in Missouri was a branch of the great American Fur Company, owned by John Jacob Astor. This was a New York company and operated all over the

United States. Its St. Louis branch was established in 1822. It was opposed by all Missouri fur traders. Astor decided to crush as many of his rivals as possible and to buy out the others. Astor already controlled the fur trade to the north-east and determined to control the trade of the west and north-west. He gradually crushed or bought out his rivals and gained control of the upper Missouri and the Utah Basin business. He was always hated by the trappers since he had a monopoly on the trade. In 1834 Astor died and the great western establishment at St. Louis was sold.

The buyers were a group of St. Louis merchants and traders, called Pratte, Chouteau and Company. Other companies were still in the field but from this time on the firm of Pratte, Chouteau and Company controlled the fur trade until 1860. It did a large business and brought much wealth to Missouri. Its directors were keen business men of experience and wealth. They were largely French. After 1860 the fur trade declined but in recent years it has become important and St. Louis is again the raw fur center of the world.

#### THE MISSOURI-SANTA FE TRADE, 1812-1870

The Missouri-Santa Fe Trade is closely related to the western fur trade. Both were controlled by Missourians. Both reached their most prosperous years about the same time and both declined about the same time. Both had their beginning in St. Louis, although the first successful trading trips to Santa Fe were made by men from central and western Missouri at Franklin, Lexington, Independence and Westport Landing, now Kansas City. However, during later years the St. Louis merchant traders had large interests in the Santa Fe trade. Both had small and unsuccessful beginnings, both started with the individual trader, and both ended with the large trader or company in control. The Santa Fe trade was at first a branch of the fur trade and of the three Santa Fe products brought back to Missouri the furs of the beaver and

otter were important. The other two products were livestock (horses and mules) and silver.

During the Spanish and French periods of Missouri history, attempts were made to establish trade between New Mexico and Missouri by the Spanish officials in St. Louis and the Spanish in Santa Fe. Some of these attempts succeeded and a small trade was begun. Toward the close a route was made by the Spaniard Vial and this route later became the Santa Fe Trail. When the United States took possession of the Louisiana country, the Spanish officials in Santa Fe changed their policy and tried in every way to prevent Missourians from coming to New Mexico. Still some Missourians attempted to trade with the Mexicans but they usually failed. In 1812 a party of men went to Santa Fe and were arrested. Three years later a party of St. Louisians tried to trade with the Mexicans and they also were arrested and their goods were confiscated. On their return they trapped for fur animals.

The year of Missouri's admission into the Union, 1821, also marked the independence of the Mexicans from Spain. Missourians thought that now it would be possible to begin a trade with Santa Fe and the other towns of New Mexico without being arrested and thrown into prison. In the fall of 1821 William Becknell and a party of men started from Franklin, Howard county, with goods for Santa Fe. The expedition was successful and made a profit. The next year Becknell made his second trip. It was even more profitable, making a profit of 200 per cent. From that time down to the '70s, when railroads appeared, the Santa Fe Trade flourished. Becknell is called "The Founder of the Santa Fe Trade and the Father of the Santa Fe Trail". He was the first man to make a really profitable trip. He was also the first man to use wagons instead of pack animals. He used wagons on his second trip in 1822.

The Missouri starting point of the trade and trail was at Franklin and the early traders all lived in central Missouri.

The importance of the trade was great. For the first twenty years, over \$3,000,000 worth of goods was sent from Missouri, and the amount was even more after the Mexican War. In return for the goods, Missouri received thousands of head of horses and mules, great numbers of furs, and for a long time \$150,000 a year in silver. Missouri probably owes her prominence as a mule state to this early trade. The silver supplied her with money which enabled her to weather panics, enjoy prosperity, and have a sound currency. Along this trail Missourians later traveled to go to New Mexico and some followed it to Arizona and southern California. Finally the Santa Fe railroad largely followed it. Both the Boone's Lick Trail from St. Louis to Franklin and the Santa Fe Trail from Franklin and Boonville to Kansas City have been marked with granite markers by the Missouri Daughters of the American Revolution. Missouri could well afford to honor this historic highway.

#### THE OREGON TRAIL

The Oregon Trail like the Santa Fe Trail was closely related to the fur trade. Both had their beginnings as routes for fur traders. They were alike in other ways. Both started near the mouth of the Kansas river and were the same for 40 miles west; both served first as trade routes and later as routes for emigrants going west to settle; both were through a hostile Indian country; both were opened by Missourians; and both brought wealth to Missouri and later took settlers from Missouri. But these two great trails also differed from each other. The Santa Fe Trail, which was 750 miles long across the plains, led in a southwest direction along the Arkansas river, and was surveyed and marked by the United States government. The Oregon trail was 2000 miles long across plains, mountains, and deserts. It led in a west and northwest direction along the Platte river, through South Pass in Wyoming and across the Rockies, over the rough land and deserts

of Montana and Idaho, and down the Snake and Columbia rivers to the Pacific. It was never marked or surveyed by the government. Although American traders operated successfully in both the Santa Fe and the Oregon country about the same time, the Oregon Trail was not well established until twenty years later, 1842.

The great American Fur Company was the first to carry on an overland fur trade with the Oregon country in the far Northwest. This trade began about 1812. Changes were gradually made in the route to shorten it and to make travel easier. The most important change came in 1822-23 when Ashley and Smith of the Rocky Mountain Fur Company discovered South Pass in Wyoming through the Rockies. South Pass gave an easy, gently sloping way over the mountains. Through South Pass the trail led to Snake river, along Snake to the Columbia, and down the Columbia to the Pacific. A short distance from South Pass was another trail to the southwest. This was the Great Salt Lake Trail to the Utah Basin. From Great Salt Lake were two trails: one led west and slightly southwest to Sacramento and San Francisco, this was the California Trail; another led southwest to southern California, this was the Mormon Trail. About one-third of the way down the Mormon Trail another branched off to Santa Fe, this was the Spanish Trail. So the Far West was gradually covered with trails for trade and travel.

Later there were other starting points of the Oregon Trail. These were along the Missouri river from the mouth of the Platte to the mouth of the Kansas. All of these small routes came together about 150 miles up the Platte. The Platte was then followed up-stream into Wyoming.

About 1832 a new element appeared on the Oregon Trail. In that year a party of settlers left Independence for Oregon. Two years later another party left. These were largely Missourians. The big emigration began after the panic of 1837. From 1842 regular organized parties began leaving for the

Far West. In 1845 over 3000 left Independence for Oregon. By 1843 the Oregon Trail was well marked and wagons could make the trip. So many Missourians settled in Oregon that one part, the Willamette Valley, was settled a'most entirely by people from Missouri. Of course there were thousands from other states but Missouri did much to settle the Northwest.

At this time the Northwest was claimed both by the United States and by England. The one to settle it first had the best chance of keeping it. Missouri's two United States senators, Thomas H. Benton and Lewis F. Linn, did more to keep the Oregon country for the United States than did any others. It had been opened and was being settled by Missourians. These two fought successfully in Congress for the protection of their people by the United States government.

Benton's son-in-law was General John C. Fremont. He also was a great explorer. In 1842 he led a party through South Pass and again in 1843. He explored the Rockies, the Utah Basin, and reached both California and Oregon. After gold was discovered in California, Missourians again flocked to the West. These went along the old trails already marked by the early Missouri fur traders, trappers, and explorers.

#### CONCLUSION

Missourians through exploring parties and trading expeditions opened the trails of the West. Along these trails the early settlers of the West were to travel and later the railroads were to follow. They discovered many of the lofty peaks and the easy passes and traced the rivers. They discovered such natural wonders as Great Salt Lake and Yellowstone National Park. Through the fur trade hundreds of men were trained who later helped the government in its explorations and in subduing the Indians. The fur trade and the Santa Fe trade for half a century brought to Missouri a commerce of nearly one-half million dollars a year. This would be equal to-day to a sum many times larger since money in those days was high.

It is not too much to say that Missouri's part in western trade from 1820 to 1860 was very important in giving prosperity to the State and people. It was also very important in exploring and later in settling the West.

### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. What three causes led the people to be interested in western trade and commerce outside of Missouri?
2. State the purpose of the Lewis and Clark expedition? What was the result?
3. Of what importance was the expedition of Pike?
4. How did these pioneer expeditions retard the settlement of the west?
5. What was the beneficial result of these expeditions?
6. Of what importance was the early fur trade in Missouri?
7. Which fur company do you consider the most important?
8. What was the origin of the Santa Fe trade?
9. What was the route of the Santa Fe trail?
10. Why was the Santa Fe trade important in Missouri?
11. Compare the Santa Fe trail with the Oregon trail.
12. How did the Oregon trail affect emigration?
13. Give your conclusions as to the importance of the Missouri exploring parties and trading expeditions.



greatest of these leaders was Thomas H. Benton, one of Missouri's first two United States senators. Benton was Missouri's United States senator for thirty years, five full terms. During the first four terms, from 1820 to 1844, Benton became more and more powerful until he virtually controlled Missouri politically. The rule of "The Fathers", of whom Benton became the leader, is one feature of this period. This period might be called the Benton period of Missouri politics.

Another feature is the growth of political parties. From 1820 to about 1830 there were no well defined national political parties, hence Missouri had none. This was a decade of personal politics. The man rather than his party was what the voters considered. The old Federalist party of Hamilton had died and all belonged to the party founded by Jefferson. The beginning of a new party came with the election of Andrew Jackson to the presidency in 1828. The followers of Jackson, of whom Benton was a leader, called themselves Democrats. They were against the United States Bank and a protective tariff. By 1830 the Democrats were fairly well organized. Missouri was Democratic down to the Civil War in 1861. The opponents of the Democrats organized at the same time. They were called Whigs. The Whigs followed Henry Clay and favored the United States Bank and a protective tariff. Missouri was never a Whig state but some of her ablest public men were Whigs. Williams H. Ashley, the great fur trader, Edward Bates, the great lawyer, and James S. Rollins, the orator and statesman, were Whigs. In Missouri the Whigs were strongest among the merchants and bankers of St. Louis and among the big slave owners in the river slave counties. Boone county was the banner Whig county in Missouri. The day of personal politics in Missouri passed in 1830. From that time party politics prevailed. The Whigs were never successful in a general presidential election in Missouri although one of their leaders, Ashley, was elected three times to Congress and served five years.



THOMAS H. BENTON

A third feature of this period in Missouri was the absence of great issues between the state parties except on money and banking. The Missouri Democrats under Benton's influence stood for hard or metal money and sound banking. Benton was called "Old Bullion" and Missouri was called "The Bullion State". Other states had paper money and wildcat banks, but Missouri did not. However, even some of the Missouri Democrats wanted cheap money and banks. The Benton Democrats were called the "Hards"; the cheap money Democrats, the "Softs". The Whigs were also in favor of paper money and banks. Although on the money question the Democrats differed among themselves, they did not split the party. A State Bank was established along very conservative lines and the Democratic party remained one. No other big issue is found between the parties in Missouri during this period.

#### MISSOURI'S GOVERNORS AND THE MISSOURI STATE GOVERNMENT, 1820-1844

During these first twenty-four years of statehood Missouri elected six governors. These men were: Alexander McNair of St. Louis county, 1820-1824; Frederick Bates of St. Louis county, 1824-1825; John Miller of Cooper county, 1825-1828, and 1828-1832; Daniel Dunklin of Washington county, 1832-1836; Lilburn W. Boggs of Jackson county, 1836-1840; and Thomas Reynolds of Howard county, 1840-1844. All of these except McNair were born in southern states—two in Virginia, two in Kentucky, and one in South Carolina. McNair was born in Pennsylvania. All of these except Reynolds had settled in Missouri before 1820. Only three of these men finished his regular four year term—McNair, Miller, and Boggs. Bates died in 1825. The lieutenant governor had previously resigned, so according to the state constitution, the president *pro tempore* of the Senate became acting governor. This man was Abraham J. Williams of Boone county. He called a special election and John Miller was elected governor to serve out Bates' term. Miller served from 1825 to 1828.

He was re-elected in 1828 and served to 1832. Miller was governor seven years the longest of any Missouri governor. Dunklin resigned in 1836 about a month before his term expired. The lieutenant governor, Boggs, became acting governor. Boggs then served a full four year term by right of election. Reynolds committed suicide early in 1844. The lieutenant governor, M. M. Marmaduke, of Saline county, served out the remainder of the term. All of these six elected governors were experienced men and each had held some important public office. McNair had helped frame Missouri's first constitution. Bates had been secretary of Missouri Territory and acting territorial governor. Miller had been an office holder and soldier and later was congressman. Dunklin and Boggs had both been lieutenant governor of Missouri. Reynolds had been a supreme court judge in Illinois. Missouri's first six governors were men of ability.

Between 1820 and 1844 the State government was busy solving many questions. Missouri was a young state. The first thing necessary was to get her government in good working order. The beginning of this was made during McNair's administration. Laws were made and enforced to protect property and punish crime. A home for the government was provided and in 1821 the permanent capital of Missouri was located, after 1826, at Jefferson City. The capitol building was begun in 1823 and was completed in 1826. It burned in 1837 and a new one was built in 1838. This one was greatly enlarged in 1887. It burned in 1911. Missouri's present capitol building was finished in 1918 and cost \$4,000,000. It is one of the finest in the nation.



ALEXANDER McNAIR

During McNair's term the Missouri State Seal was adopted. The twenty-three smaller stars represent the twenty-three states admitted before Missouri; the large star represents Missouri as the twenty-fourth state. The Latin motto of the State, "Salus populi suprema lex esto" means, "Let the welfare of the people be the supreme law." During Governor McNair's term the State government made its first venture in finance. This was the Loan Office Law of 1821. The effect of the panic of 1819 was still felt. Times were hard, money was scarce, and interest rates were high. The State issued \$185,000. of Loan Office certificates to help her people, and promised to redeem these in money. These certificates, like money, were of different amounts ranging from 12½ cents to \$10. The State accepted them in payment of taxes and soon they circulated like money. Farmers could borrow these certificates up to \$1,000 by giving a note or mortgage on their property. All went well until some of the borrowers refused to pay their notes. The State tried to collect but the United States Supreme Court held that the certificates were unconstitutional and the notes could not legally be collected. The borrowers did not have to pay although morally they should

have paid. The State could also have refused to redeem the certificates, but Missouri did not. She redeemed the certificates dollar for dollar. Missouri has never refused to pay her debts or keep her obligations.

During Bates' term the principal law passed was to organize the militia to protect the State against Indians. All men between the ages of eighteen and forty-five years were required to be enrolled in the militia. In April



FREDERICK BATES

of each year "Muster Day" was held in each township. All the militiamen organized into companies. In May and October all the companies in a county met and drilled.

During Miller's Administration the State was very prosperous. The government performed two things of importance. The penitentiary was located and built in Jefferson City. The Black Hawk Indian war broke out in Illinois and Wisconsin, and Missouri fear-

ed the Indians might cross the Mississippi and give trouble here. Troops were sent to northeast Missouri but no hostile Indians were met.



JOHN MILLER



DANIEL DUNKLIN

The term of Governor Dunklin from 1832 to 1836 marked one important government act. This was the Platte Purchase. The Platte Country was in northwest Missouri. It embraced what are today the six counties of Atchison, Holt, Nodaway, Andrew, Buchanan, and Platte. The Sac and Fox Indians occupied it but already some white settlers had settled there. The United States Government in 1836 gave the Indians \$7,500 and a tract of land in Kansas and the Indians in return gave up claim to the

Platte country. The principal demand for this country had come from the people in Clay county. General William Clark, "Red Head", arranged the treaty. Missouri's United States

senator, Lewis F. Linn, was the real author of the Platte Purchase as it was he who persuaded Congress to give this land to Missouri. In 1837 the State of Missouri took possession. During Governor Dunklin's administration Missouri was even more prosperous than before. Speculation again prevailed but in 1837 hard times set in and continued several years. By 1836 the people wanted better transportation so in that year a railroad convention was held in St. Louis. Everybody was enthusiastic and the Legislature chartered a number of railroad lines. Nothing further was done, however, and it was fifteen years before railroad building began in Missouri.

Governor Bogg's administration was most important and exciting. It was filled with seven historic events. In 1837



LILBURN W. BOGGS

the Legislature founded a State Bank. Later branches of this bank were established over Missouri. All were sound and rendered the people service. In the same year the famous panic of 1837 took place. Missouri suffered but not so much as did other states. This was because she had no wildcat banks and wildcat paper money, because she had received silver through the Santa Fe Trade, and also because she had not speculated so much. It was in 1837 that the United States Government called on Missouri for troops to fight the Seminole Indians in Florida. Colonel Richard Gentry, of Columbia, raised a regiment. The men suffered severely and Col. Gentry was killed in battle.

It was during Governor Bogg's term that trouble arose with the Mormons, which finally resulted in war and their ex-

pulsion from the State. The militia was called out and the Mormons surrendered in 1839. They left Missouri in 1839. The story of the Mormon War will be told later. The next important acts during these four years were the founding of Missouri's public school system in 1839 and the establishment of the University of Missouri at Columbia the same year. The last event was trouble with Iowa over the northern boundary line. This has been called the "Honey War" and will also be considered under "A Century of Military Missouri".

Governor Reynolds is best known in Missouri history for being the author of the law abolishing imprisonment for debt. It was a very short law but it was also very important. It read: "Imprisonment for debt is hereby forever abolished."



THOMAS REYNOLDS

#### MISSOURI'S CONGRESSMEN AND UNITED STATES SENATORS, 1820-1844

During these twenty-four years Missouri had four United States Senators and fourteen Representatives in Congress. Of the fourteen Congressmen only five are well known: John Scott of Ste. Genevieve county, 1820-26; Edward Bates of St. Louis county, 1826-1828; William H. Ashley of St. Louis county, 1831-1836; John Miller of Howard county, 1836-1842; and John C. Edwards of Cole county, 1840-1842. Of these five men, four were natives of Virginia and had settled in Missouri before 1820. Edwards was born in Kentucky and came to Missouri in 1828. They were able men and each had held public office in Missouri.



John Scott was Missouri's last territorial delegate and her first congressman. He had received a fine education and was a noted lawyer. His most important service to Missouri was in aiding her to secure statehood. He was a delegate to the Missouri Constitutional Convention of 1820 and was the author of the provision relating to education. In 1824 he cast his vote in Congress for Adams, instead of for Jackson. This lost him the friendship of Benton and in 1826 the political support of Missourians.

Edward Bates was a brother of Frederick Bates, Missouri's second State governor. He was a successful lawyer and an able statesman. He had served in the convention of 1820, and although he was only twenty-seven years old, he was one of the leaders. He was Missouri's first attorney general in 1820 and in 1826 was elected to Congress. He became a Whig and was one of the leaders in Missouri of the Whig party. In 1860 he became a Republican and in 1861 was appointed to President Lincoln's cabinet, being the first man west of the Mississippi to hold a cabinet position. He was one of the most eminent men Missouri has produced.

William H. Ashley was one of Missouri's most successful and wealthy fur traders. He was Missouri's first lieutenant governor in 1820 and served four years. He devoted his later life to politics. He was a Whig, and although Missouri was a Democratic State, Ashley served five years in Congress. His ability was employed in Congress in aiding Missouri and the West in developing the Santa Fe Trade and in securing protection against the Indians.

John Miller was the first Congressman from central Missouri. He had been an editor and a soldier before settling in Missouri. A man of force and ability he soon attracted attention. Before his election to Congress, he had served as governor for seven years. His record as a public official was good.

John C. Edwards came to Missouri in 1828. He had served Missouri as secretary of state for seven years before his election to Congress. He was later elected governor in 1844 and served four years. He was a lawyer.

The four United States senators from Missouri during this period were David Barton of St. Louis county, 1820-1830; Thomas H. Benton of St. Louis county, 1820-1850; Alexander Buckner of Cape Girardeau, 1830-1833; and Lewis F. Linn of Ste. Genevieve county, 1833-1844. Barton and Benton were natives of North Carolina; Buckner and Linn were natives of Kentucky. All had settled in Missouri before 1820. Linn was a doctor, the other three were lawyers. All were very able men and made fine public officials.

David Barton was the most popular man in Missouri in 1820. He had served as judge and was elected president of the convention of 1820. He greatly influenced the drafting of Missouri's first constitution. When Missouri became a state, Barton was easily elected to the United States Senate and was reelected in 1824. Like Bates, he favored Adams for president in 1824 and his popularity decreased. In 1830 he was defeated for reelection. He was an exceptional man and made an able and honest public official.

Alexander Buckner was elected in 1830 to succeed Barton. He was a prominent lawyer and was highly respected. He died of the cholera in 1833.

Lewis F. Linn was appointed to succeed Buckner in 1833. He was elected in 1834, and reelected in 1836 and 1843. He was a doctor, the only one ever elected from Missouri to the United States Senate. Although he had never sought public office and was not a politician, he was one of the two greatest Missouri statesmen prior to the Civil War. He was an advocate of cheap land to the settlers, the purchase of the Platte Country, and the acquisition of the Oregon Country. So widespread was his popularity and services that he was



LEWIS F. LINN

claimed by the people of Iowa and Oregon as their senator although he represented Missouri. He was called "The Model Senator from Missouri". He and his colleague, Benton, were close friends and worked together. To Linn Missouri is indebted for the Platte Country and he did more than any other public official to obtain the great Oregon Country for the United States.

Thomas H. Benton served as Missouri's United States senator from 1820 to 1850—a period of thirty years. During this period he was easily reelected in 1826, 1832, and 1838. His control of Missouri became stronger and stronger until it seemed that none could defeat or hurt him. He was very able, a deep student, a convincing speaker, and honest. He did everything he could in Congress to help Jackson abolish the United States Bank, and develop Missouri and the West by means of cheap public land, protection of trade and frontier against Indians, and exploration of the West.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. Explain the relation between state and national political parties.
2. What do you understand by the term, "The Rule of the Fathers?"
3. Contrast politics of 1820-1830 with the political situation in Missouri today.
4. Explain the rise of political parties in 1830. Name the leaders of each party.
5. What were the state issues between the political parties?

6. To whom was the term, "Old Bullion", applied? Why was Missouri called, "The Bullion State?"
7. Characterize the first six governors of Missouri.
8. Describe the state seal of Missouri.
9. What event occurred following 1821 which proved the integrity of Missouri?
10. What was Muster Day?
11. What was the important event during Governor Dunklin's administration?
12. What were the most important historic events during Governor Bogg's administration?
13. What important law was established during Governor Reynolds' administration?
14. Name and characterize the first four United States senators from Missouri.
15. Compare the senators with the congressmen of the same period.

## CHAPTER II

### DEMOCRATIC RULE AND POLITICAL UNREST,

1844-1860

This period of Missouri politics from 1844 to 1860 is quite different from the preceding period. The Democratic party, it is true, ruled Missouri but it became more and more divided. The differences between the two periods are many. In this period elections were decided by politics rather than by the character of the men. Politics reigned supreme. Another difference was the appearance and rise to power of new political leaders. "The Rule of the Fathers" was at an end and new men, younger men, took their place. In the Democratic party the new leaders were called the "Central Clique". They lived in Central Missouri. At first they supported Benton but later they worked against him, and finally they defeated him. This period also marked the appearance of big issues or problems in Missouri politics. These problems related to money, more democracy in government (i. e., more elective officials and shorter terms), the annexation of Texas, State aid to railroads, extension of slavery in the territories, and the fight against Benton. Of these problems or issues the two most important were Benton and slavery. The Benton problem was practically settled in 1851 when he was defeated for reelection to the United States Senate, but the slavery issue was not settled until the Civil War ended in 1865.

The slavery issue and the Benton issue (i. e., the determination of the new leaders to defeat Benton) were closely related. In fact, nearly all of these issues, except that relating to the railroads, were closely related to the fight on Benton. It was the great issue of slavery in the territories which finally broke up the Whig party, caused the rise of the Republican party, and eventually ruined the old Democratic party.

This period of Missouri politics is like a drama. It reveals great actors playing parts full of lofty ideals and human interests. The first act closes in 1851 when the new leaders rise to power and the great Benton is defeated. The next ten years are marked with the death of Benton, the border war with Kansas, the gradual fall of the old parties, the rise of a new party, and always the problem of slavery, growing larger and larger in the territories. This act closes with the Democratic party of the new leaders (now older, of course) in seeming unlimited control of Missouri. The Nation is in control of the Republican party and we hear the distant rumblings of civil war. The next period from 1861 to 1870 is but a continuation of this drama, which is the most tragic in our history.

Bearing in mind that the two main issues are first the desire of the new leaders to defeat Benton, and second, the growing problem of slavery extension in the territories, it will not be hard to understand this interesting and instructive period in Missouri state politics. It should also be stated that during this period Missouri was always Democratic in both national and state elections and that the new leaders who displaced Benton were generally of southern birth and southern sympathy, and were pronounced advocates of slavery and slavery extension in the territories. Despite Missouri being a Democratic state during these years, a new class of people were settling here, who differed from the proslavery leaders of the Democratic party. These people came from the free states lying to the east of Missouri, especially from Illinois, Indiana, Ohio, and Pennsylvania. During the forties and fifties a large German immigration flowed into Missouri, settling in St. Louis and the neighboring counties. This German class of settlers like the freestate settlers from the east, also opposed the proslavery leaders of the Democratic party. Many of the eastern and German settlers at first voted the Democratic ticket, but later helped split that party and some, including all of the Germans, eventually went into the new Republi-

can party. The main point to remember, however, is that this new immigration was pro-Union in sympathy and was not pro-slavery or prosouthern. The Irish immigration also began pouring into Missouri in the fifties. The Irish became Democrats. So it is seen that instead of Missouri having a population of the same stock and the same general ideas in politics as she had before when her people came largely from southern states, she now had a mixed population holding conflicting ideas in politics. The Nation was dividing along sectional lines and Missouri was also dividing on the big question of slavery extension in the territories.

#### THE ELECTION OF 1844 AND THE FIRST STATEWIDE ATTACK ON BENTON

The election of 1844 is important. The issues in Missouri in 1844 were "Hard" or "Soft" money, the annexation of Texas, the election of two United States Senators, five congressmen, and a governor, and a new State constitution. Most important of all, however, is the fact that this election marks the beginning of two great movements—the fall of Benton and the division inside the Democratic party. Both are closely related to each other. Each of the issues of this election will now be considered as well as its relation to Benton and the Democratic party.

The "Hard" and "Soft" money issue began shortly after the panic of 1837, in which year was established The Bank of Missouri controlled by the Missouri State Government. This bank and its branches were conservatively managed and Missouri's money was on a sound, metal basis. Benton was a hard, or metal, money man. He believed in gold and silver. Many Missourians in both parties believed in easier or cheaper money. The easy money Democrats were called "Softs". They opposed Benton. By 1840 the "Softs" and the Whigs in St. Louis voted together and by 1844 the split in the Democratic party had become statewide. Benton was the leader of

the "Hards" and was supported by all hard money men and by a group of younger politicians in Central Missouri, who were called the "Central Clique". Although the Whigs had put out state candidates in 1840, they voted with the "Soft Democrats" in 1844.

The immediate annexation of Texas was also an issue in Missouri and the Nation in 1844. Many Missourians had settled in Texas and had fought for Texas independence against Mexico. Texas now desired to become a state. Benton was opposed to annexing Texas, without first having an agreement with Mexico, since Mexico had not yet recognized the independence of Texas. He said that it would hurt Missouri in her profitable trade with Santa Fe, since Mexico would take offence and stop her province of New Mexico trading with the United States. He also thought annexation would lead to war with Mexico, and in this he was right. Missourians, however, wanted Texas. Benton realized this. Besides, the national slogan of the Democratic party in 1844 was "Annexation of Texas and Occupation of Oregon". This slogan helped the Democratic party in Missouri and really in part helped Benton, since he had always stood for the occupation of the Oregon country.

The third great issue was the actual election of officials, especially of members of the Legislature and of governor. The new Legislature was to elect two United States senators, one for six years to succeed Benton and one for four years to fill out the term of Linn, who had died in 1843 and in whose place David R. Atchison had been temporarily appointed. There were also five Congressmen to be elected. The Benton or "Hard" candidate for governor was John C. Edwards. His opponent was the "Soft" candidate Charles H. Allen, who was supported by the Whigs.

The last issue in 1844 was the question of calling a constitutional convention to frame a new constitution for Missouri. Many objected to the old constitution of 1820. Some disliked



its provisions regarding all judges being appointed and holding office during good behavior instead of being elected for a term of years. They also thought the Legislature had too much power and that it should be limited on some subjects. Others thought that the system of county representation in the Legislature was unfair to the populous counties since they had little more representation than the sparsely settled counties.

Benton and the "Hard" Democrats won. John C. Edwards was elected governor. The Legislature was closely divided and Benton was re-elected by a majority of only eight votes. Atchison, one of the new leaders, was elected senator. Among the congressmen elected were two able men who later became governors of Missouri, Sterling Price and John S. Phelps. The leader of the Missouri House of Representatives was Claiborne F. Jackson, another man who later became governor. In a few years these new leaders turned against Benton and finally defeated him. The people voted in favor of a constitutional convention.

Senator David R. Atchison was a native of Kentucky. He was a lawyer of ability and had served both in the Legislature and on the bench. He came from Platte county. He was one of the younger leaders and after 1848 opposed Benton's views on slavery. He was a strong States' right man and favored the slave states. He was re-elected in 1848 but was defeated in 1854.



JOHN C. EDWARDS

Governor John C. Edwards, of Cole county, was also a Kentuckian. He was a lawyer and had served Missouri as secretary of state and as congressman. His administration was a success and Missouri grew in wealth and population. It was marked by several important

events. One of the first was trouble between Iowa and Missouri over the northern boundary line. This is called the "Honey War" and will be considered under "A Century of Military Missouri". The boundary line was finally determined by the United States Supreme Court in 1848. In 1845 the constitutional convention met and framed a new constitution. It was submitted to the people, who rejected it in 1846. It was a good constitution but, somehow, it did not satisfy the people. The most important event was the outbreak of war between the United States and Mexico. The national government called for volunteers and Missourians enlisted by the hundreds. They were led by such men as Alexander W. Doniphan and Sterling Price. The Missouri troops made a wonderful record in conquering New Mexico and several large provinces in Old Mexico. This was in 1846 and 1847. On their return they received a great welcome. The story of Doniphan's Expedition will be told under "A Century of Military Missouri". During Governor Edward's administration the third State institution was established, the first being the State penitentiary at Jefferson City and the second the University of Missouri at Columbia. This was the establishment of a State hospital for the insane at Fulton in 1847. Since then three more State hospitals have been established at St. Joseph, Nevada, and Farmington. Excluding the Mexican War, the most important event during these years was the gathering opposition to Benton.

#### THE FIGHT AGAINST BENTON AND HIS DEFEAT

The money issue had hardly been settled in Missouri in favor of the "Hards" and the Texas question had hardly been disposed of by immediate annexation in 1845, when the fight on Benton was renewed. The new Democratic leaders of Missouri were determined to defeat the great statesman. He had held his high office since 1820. Some thought that this was long enough and that some other person should have a

chance. The politicians gave expression to this view. Benton had not built up a real political machine. He had not distributed political offices as he might have done. This weakened him with the politicians. His position on hard money and the Texas question had weakened him with the people. Moreover, he had been very independent and frequently had been rude even to those who had helped him. He was a great man and the people admired him for his ability, renown, industry, and honesty. He was never, however, a popular hero having the love of his voters. Gradually the young politicians began secretly, and later openly, criticising and attacking him. Benton was losing in Missouri and he was now losing in Washington.

During President Andrew Jackson's rise and rule to power, Benton had been powerful in the national councils of the Democratic party. He and Jackson became close friends, and Jackson was always the real hero of Missourians. After the national election of 1840 the Democratic party in Congress became more and more southern in sympathy and ideals and passed under the control of southern leaders. Benton was first of all a believer in the Union. He loved it and fought for it, in and out of politics. He opposed everything and every measure which he thought might hurt the Union. The southern leaders were believers in the doctrine of States' right and in the right of extending slavery in the new territories. Benton had no faith in these southern leaders. He thought that they were trying to destroy the Union. They in turn hated him. The new prosouthern leaders in Missouri knew this condition and took advantage of it. Benton had lost influence in Congress; now he was to lose influence in Missouri.

The Missouri election of 1848 was purely a struggle between the Democrats and Whigs. The fight against Benton did not enter into it, at least not openly. The Democratic candidate for governor was Austin A. King, of Ray county; the Whig candidate was James S. Rollins, of Boone county.

Governor King was easily elected and the State went Democratic as usual. Three rising young men, out of the five elected to Congress, were later to achieve prominence in public office,—John S. Phelps (already mentioned and first elected in 1844), Willard P. Hall (who had been first elected to Congress in 1846 and who later became acting governor), and James S. Green (who later became United States Senator). All three were very able men. When the Legislature met, Senator Atchison was easily reelected to the United States Senate.

Governor King was a native of Tennessee. He was a lawyer of ability and had practiced both in Boone and Ray county. He had served in the Legislature and on the bench and later he served in Congress. During his administration (1848-1852) some important events occurred. The State Government began giving financial aid to railroads, the fight against Benton succeeded, and the split in the Democratic party widened so that in 1851 Missouri elected a Whig United States Senator. During

these four years the State established a school for the deaf at Fulton (1851) and a school for the blind at St. Louis (1851). The story of the building of Missouri railroads will be told in "A Century of Commerce and Transportation".

The fight against Benton which had begun in 1844 entered its second and last stage in 1849. The issue then was money, the issue now was slavery extension in the territories. The Nation had gained much new territory as a result of the Mexican war. The South wanted slavery permitted in this territory, the North wanted slavery prohibited there. Benton



AUSTIN A. KING

wanted California to be admitted as a free state and all the rest of the new territory to be divided by the Missouri Compromise line extending westward. The new prosouthern leaders in Missouri now saw an opportunity to defeat Benton and they planned carefully and well.

A set of resolutions, called the "Jackson Resolutions", were introduced in the Missouri Senate by Claiborne F. Jackson. These resolutions stated that only the people in a territory could prohibit slavery and that Congress did not have this power. They further declared that if Congress did assume such power, then Missouri would stand by the southern, slaveholding states. Finally, they instructed Missouri's United States Senators to vote accordingly. These resolutions were adopted by the Legislature by a large vote and were sent to both Benton and Atchison. Similar resolutions had either been adopted or proposed in other southern states, but Benton saw that the "Jackson Resolutions" were a direct attack on him and his policy. He accepted the challenge.

The State was campaigned by Benton and his opponents from one corner to the other beginning in 1849 and lasting until the election in 1850. Benton now waged the bitterest and most relentless fight of his life. He appealed to the people. He might have refused to fight on this issue but he preferred battle to compromise and eventual inglorious defeat. He opposed the "Jackson Resolutions" on the ground that they threatened the break up of the Union and that they were passed by his political enemies and not by the people.

The election resulted in giving the Whigs the largest number of members in the Legislature. The Benton men came second and the anti-Benton men third. No one of the three had a majority. On the point at issue, the "Jackson Resolutions", the Whigs really felt like Benton, but they had opposed each other for years. They refused to help him now. Finally, after repeated voting in 1851 the anti-Benton men, led by the new leaders, voted with the Whigs and elected Henry S.



PIONEER STUMP SPEAKING IN MISSOURI, BY BINGHAM

Geyer of St. Louis. Benton had finally been defeated after serving Missouri thirty years in the United States Senate. His successor Senator Geyer, was a native of Maryland. He was an able lawyer and one of the Whig leaders of Missouri.

But Benton did not know, or he refused to acknowledge defeat. He had been a fearless fighter all his life and he was determined to continue the fight. He felt that he was right and he felt that the Union was rapidly approaching destruction and war unless a change came soon. Benton decided to do his part until the end. In 1852 he ran for representative in Congress from St. Louis and was elected. The "Jackson Resolutions" and the question of slavery extension were still the issues. In 1854 when Senator Atchison was up for reelection to the United States Senate, Benton worked hard against him, as Atchison was one of the prosouthern leaders. Again he stumped the State and again the Legislature split into three parties. So bitter was feeling that even the Legislature could not agree and actually failed to elect a successor to Atchison. So Missouri for two years, 1855-1857, was represented in the United States Senate by only one man, Henry S. Geyer. Benton, himself defeated, had succeeded in defeating one of his strongest opponents and political enemies, Senator Atchison. In 1855 Benton ran for governor. He was now over seventy years old but he again waged a vigorous campaign. He was hopelessly defeated, and he retired to his home and library in Washington. Here he died in 1858, the greatest statesman Missouri has produced and "The Greatest Statesman of the West". Three years to the month after his death the Nation was engaged in a civil war which lasted until 1865.

#### ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR PRICE, 1852-1856, AND THE STRUGGLE FOR KANSAS, 1854-1857

The election of 1852 was the last in which the Whig party had a candidate for governor in Missouri and a candidate for

president of the United States. After this election the Whig party rapidly went to pieces. Two new parties appeared, the American party, which lasted only through the one general state and national election of 1856, and the Republican party, which did not appear in a Missouri general election until 1860 although it had put out a national ticket in 1856. By 1860 the Democratic party had split into two parts. The Republican had grown rapidly in strength over the North, and a Union party had appeared. It is clearly seen that there was deep political unrest in the fifties. This led to the break-up of parties.

The chief cause of this unrest and of this break-up was the question of slavery extension in the territories. This question first rose to prominence in 1820 when the Missouri Compromise bill was passed. Despite this settlement in 1820, it again rose to prominence after the Mexican War in connection with slavery in the new territory acquired. Again it was settled by the Compromise of 1850, but again it rose to prominence when the Kansas-Nebraska bill was passed in 1854. It was settled once more in 1857 when Kansas became a free soil territory but peace between Kansas and Missouri did not come. Finally, in 1860 the national victory of the Republican party and the closely following secession from the Union of some of the Southern states brought matters to a crisis and war broke out. Missouri as a state in the Union was affected by these currents of national life from 1850 to 1860, and as a state bordering on the new Territory of Kansas she was vitally concerned. It was during Governor Price's administration that the Kansas troubles began.

Sterling Price was elected governor of Missouri in 1852. He served a full, four-year term. Governor Price was a native of Virginia. After coming to Missouri he settled in Chariton county where he was a merchant and later a





STERLING PRICE

farmer. He had served in the Missouri Legislature and in Congress. During the Mexican War he successfully led a regiment of Missouri troops. He was a very popular man, being perhaps the only one trusted both by the Benton and the anti-Benton men. He made a good governor, and later at the outbreak of the Civil War he was perhaps the most beloved man in the State.

During his administration the Benton fight continued over the "Jackson Resolutions". More state financial aid was given the railroads, the public school system was reorganized, and the struggle for Kansas began. The new public school law, passed in 1853, was important in providing for a separate state superintendent of schools and a county school commissioner in each county. The public schools immediately improved and public education advanced rapidly down to the Civil War, which practically stopped instruction over a large part of Missouri. However, the greatest event of political importance was the Kansas trouble.

The settlement of Iowa and western Missouri brought a demand that the Kansas and Nebraska country be opened for settlers. The reason was cheap land. The new country was at that time a great Indian reservation. The people in northwest Missouri were especially interested in having Kansas opened. Besides the Indian title there was another problem to solve. The Missouri Compromise had made all north of 36° 30' free soil, excepting Missouri. Kansas and Nebraska lay north of that line. But Missourians wanted to make Kansas a slave territory and later a slave state. Senator Atchison was one of the leaders in pressing the question on Congress. In 1854

Congress passed the Kansas-Nebraska bill. This bill opened the two territories to settlement and provided that the settlers should decide the issue of slavery. Everyone expected that Nebraska, lying west of free soil Iowa, would become a free soil territory and state, and that Kansas, lying west of Missouri, would become a slave territory and state. The passage of this bill was one of the causes, if not the main cause, for the death of the Whig party, the rise of the Republican party, and the later split in the Democratic party.

When the news reached Missouri that Kansas was open to settlement, there was great satisfaction. Missouri had a vital interest in making Kansas a slave territory since the State already had free soil on the north and east (Iowa and Illinois) and, therefore, did not want to have free soil on the west. Free soil so close at hand meant loss of runaway slaves. The South also wanted Kansas to become a slave state so as to aid them in Congress, especially in the Senate. So really Missouri and the South had a big issue at stake in Kansas. Bearing this in mind, it is easier to understand why Missouri fought so hard for Kansas.

The first settlers in Kansas were Missourians, but northern settlers began coming in almost immediately. Many of the northern settlers came largely to vote Kansas a free territory, although some came intending to settle. These northern voters and settlers were aided by northern abolition societies. Missourians realized the danger. They organized in bands and companies and secret lodges. They were determined that Kansas should not be made a free state largely by New England voters. On election day many crossed over into Kansas and voted. They aided the proslavery settler and elected a proslavery territorial legislature, which established slavery. The northern settlers refused to obey the legal government and adopted an anti-slavery constitution and government making Kansas a free territory. Kansas now had its own civil war, the northerners getting aid from New England and other

eastern states, the southerners receiving aid from Missouri.

Bands of armed Missourians invaded Kansas to stamp out the northern territorial government and drive out the northern voters and settlers. Some were led by prominent men, among whom was ex-Senator Atchison, a man of influence, honesty, and wealth. The antislavery men in Kansas called these Missourians "Border Ruffians" and the Missourians accepted the name. However, most of them were not ruffians but were men fighting for a principle in which they believed and against what they regarded as an unwarranted intrusion on the part of the northern people.

The antislavery forces organized. Outrages were committed by both sides. There was fighting that resulted in death and crime. One of the abolitionist leaders was John Brown, who was a fanatic in his hatred of slavery. Things went from bad to worse until no man's life was safe in Kansas. The antislavery people increased and Missouri and the South appealed for southern men to settle in Kansas. This they refused to do, although they hoped to see Kansas a slave state. The reason of their refusal was the danger of losing their slave property. In 1857 civil war was stopped by the United States Government. An election was held, and Kansas elected an antislavery legislature. The struggle for Kansas was over; the antislavery forces had won. But the Kansas Border Troubles were not over. These will be considered under Governor Stewart's administration.

#### ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR ROBERT M. STEWART, 1857-1860

The election of 1856 in Missouri was another Democratic victory. The Whig party had passed and a new party called the American party was in the field, followed by the old Whig voters. The new Republican party did not appear in Missouri in 1856, although it had out a national ticket. This election also marked the passing of Benton. He was badly defeated for

governor. The successful candidate for that office was Tru-  
sten Polk. The Legislature elected was strongly prosouthern  
and anti-Benton.



TRUSTEN POLK

Governor Polk was a native  
of Maryland. He was a lawyer  
and made his home in St. Louis.  
A few days after he became  
governor he was elected, in 1857,  
United States Senator for six years  
to succeed Senator Henry S.  
Geyer. He was strongly pro-  
southern and was expelled from  
the Senate in 1862 on the charge  
of disloyalty. The same Legisla-  
ture elected James S. Green, of  
Lewis county, as the other United  
States Senator. Senator Green,  
who was a lawyer, was a native

of Virginia. He was one of the ablest, if not the foremost,  
orator Missouri has produced. Although a young man he  
had held important public positions  
and was one of the leaders of the  
Democratic party in Missouri. He  
did more through his public  
speeches to defeat Benton in 1850  
and again in 1856 than any other  
man in this State. He was a re-  
markable orator, a shrewd poli-  
tician, and an able senator.

On his election to the United  
States Senate, Governor Polk re-  
signed the governorship, and Han-  
cock Jackson, the lieutenant-gov-  
ernor, served until the special  
election was held in August, 1857.



JAMES S. GREEN

At this special election, Robert M. Stewart, the Democratic candidate, was opposed by James S. Rollins, one of the ablest Whig leaders of the State, who ran on the American ticket. The contest was close and Governor Stewart was elected by a majority of only 334 votes—this indicates the great growth



ROBERT M. STEWART

of the opposition. Governor Stewart was a native of New York. He made his home in St. Joseph. He was an able lawyer and had filled many important public offices. He was deeply interested in railroads, being president of the Hannibal and St. Joseph road. He was one of the proslavery leaders but during the Civil War sided with the Union. The principal events of his administration were the establishment of a state banking system which gave Missouri better banking facilities, the cre-

ation of the office of state bank examiner to inspect banks, and the Kansas Border Troubles.

The Kansas Border Troubles immediately followed the victory of the antislavery settlers in Kansas. Missourians had ceased invading Kansas and Kansans now began to invade Missouri, especially southwest Missouri. They raided with armed bands the western border counties of Missouri, carried off slaves, robbed the citizens, destroyed property, and killed innocent people. Sometimes their invasions were repelled, at other times they left only when they could carry off no more plunder. Missourians called them "Jayhawkers". Some fought solely against slavery, but most of them were rascals, thieves, and robbers. Finally, Governor Stewart called out the Missouri militia, and the Kansas and the United States Government sent troops to put an end to such conditions. In 1860

quiet was again restored to be followed in 1861 with war between the states.

#### THE ELECTION OF 1860 AND THE DIVISION OF PARTIES

The election of 1860 is one of the most important in American history. It marked the break-up of the old parties, the rise of the Republican party to national power, and, by the election of Lincoln to the presidency, led to the secession of the southern states. However, in Missouri, it showed the remarkable organization of the state Democratic party, the voting strength of the conservative Whigs who now voted for the new Constitutional Union party, and, most important, an overwhelming desire by Missourians for peace, compromise, and conservatism. Missourians knew by experience what radical proslavery or radical antislavery policy meant. Either led to war. Missourians also knew the effects of war. They had had experience on Kansas soil and on Missouri soil.

The national political situation in 1860 was a result of the old Kansas-Nebraska bill of 1854, which had killed the Whig party, and of slavery in the territories, which now split the old Democratic party. The new Republican party of the North was opposed to more slave territories. Its leader was Abraham Lincoln, of Illinois. It was the extreme antislavery party of the North. Many of the old Whigs and conservatives of the nation rallied under a new party called the Constitutional Union party. The Constitutional Union party stood for compromise on the slavery question and for preservation of the Union. Its candidate for president was John Bell, of Tennessee. It was the most conservative of all the parties. The old Democratic party divided into two parties, a northern and a southern. The cause of this division was the question of slavery in the territories. The northern Democrats were moderate and conservative. They wanted the people in a territory to have the privilege of deciding for or against slavery. The candidate for president of the northern Democrats was

Stephen A. Douglass, of Illinois. These northern Democrats were called Douglass Democrats. Their proposed settlement of the slavery question was the same as had been tried in Kansas. The southern Democrats remembered how the Kansas affair had ended in a victory for the antislavery people and they did not want to try this method again. They organized and nominated John C. Breckenridge, of Kentucky. The Breckenridge Democrats, as they were called, demanded that Congress protect slavery in the territories. They were the extreme proslavery Democrats of the south. So, there were two radical parties. One was a northern party, the Republican, against slavery, and the other was a southern party, the Breckenridge Democratic party, for slavery. There were also two moderate parties. One was the Constitutional Union party, for compromise, and the other, the Douglass Democratic party, was for settlement of slavery by the people in a territory.

The state election in Missouri was held in August 1860. There were four candidates for governor. Claiborne F. Jackson was the Douglass Democratic candidate for governor; Sample Orr was the candidate of the conservatives or the old Whigs. The other two parties had candidates but the election really lay between Jackson and Orr, both running on moderate or conservative party tickets. The candidates of the other two parties, the Republican and Breckenridge Democratic, together received only 10% of the votes cast. Jackson was elected governor. This election shows that Missouri was conservative on the slavery question and stood for compromise, since 90% of the votes cast were for the conservative parties. It shows that Missouri was opposed to the two extreme or radical parties, since these two parties combined received only 10% of the votes. On the other hand, the radical proslavery party, the Breckenridge Democratic, elected the largest number of men to the Legislature, and they and the Douglass members were easily in the majority. In other words, the election

was a Democratic victory with the Douglass Democrats winning the governorship and the Douglass and Breckenridge Democrats controlling the Legislature.

The national election, held in Missouri in November, 1860, gave similar results. Douglass carried Missouri over Bell by a very small margin. These two together received 70% of the votes cast, and Breckenridge and Lincoln received 30%. Missouri was still in favor of the moderate or conservative parties. However, the radical parties, both the antislavery Republican and the proslavery Breckenridge Democratic party, were gaining strength. The strength of the Republicans was in St. Louis and the neighboring German population counties. The voting strength of the Breckenridge Democrats was mainly in the Ozark counties. The Constitutional Unionists were strongest in the old Whig slave counties, with scattering support in the Ozarks. The Douglass Democrats carried the rest of the State. The principal thing to bear in mind regarding the two elections in Missouri in 1860 is the decision of Missouri to take a moderate, conservative stand. Missouri feared what a victory of either of the radical parties might bring—war. And Missouri did not want war if peace could be kept through moderation and compromise. War to Missouri meant not only a conflict between North and South, but it meant civil strife inside Missouri. By 1860 Missouri had a population of 1,063,000 whites and 115,000 slaves. Missouri had too many slaves for her people to be entirely antislavery in sentiment and she had too few slaves for her people to be entirely proslavery. Missouri had a divided population. She was a border state between North and South. Every interest of Missouri lay in the direction of peace and compromise.



## SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. Compare the political period of 1844 to 1860 with the period of 1820 to 1844.
2. Show how immigration into Missouri affected the political parties.
3. Why is the election of 1844 important?
4. Why did Benton and his followers oppose the annexation of Texas?
5. Since Missouri was Democratic how do you explain the election of a Wing United States Senator in 1851?
6. How do you explain Benton's opposition to the "Jackson Resolutions?"
7. What are the causes which contributed to the defeat of Benton?
8. Why did the Legislature fail to elect Missouri's second United States senator in 1855?
9. Explain the break up of the political parties from 1852 to 1857.
10. Why were the Democrats able to elect their candidate, Sterling Price, for governor in 1852?
11. What was the effect of the Kansas-Nebraska Bill on the political parties?
12. Why was Missouri so vitally interested in the Kansas Struggle?
13. Classify the four political parties in 1860, stating what each party stood for.
14. The result of the election of 1860 proved that Missouri wished to take what attitude on the slavery issue?

### CHAPTER III

## CIVIL WAR POLITICS AND RADICAL REPUBLICAN RULE, 1861-1870

The ten years from 1861 to 1870 are the most important and significant in Missouri political history. The events which occurred in Missouri during this decade not only influenced American history and decided Missouri history of that day but their effects determined Missouri's political history for a third of a century afterward and shaped Missouri's taxation policy and even her constitution for nearly fifty years. Such an important period deserves the clearest explanation and the most serious study. Important issues and decisive events followed each other quickly. Hardly was one question settled until a new problem arose and demanded attention.

In the beginning of this period the problem was would Missouri stand for the North or the South? Would Missouri stand by the Union or secede? The majority of Missourians wanted peace and compromise and the Union preserved. Then the Civil War opened. Missouri hoped to remain neutral, but she could not. Her State government elected in 1860 sided with the South and was forced to flee from the State before the Union army. A provisional government was established which stood for the Union. Missouri had finally decided this problem. Then came the issue of freeing the slaves in Missouri. The conservative Union men in Missouri wanted only gradual emancipation. They were opposed by the radical Union men who wanted immediate emancipation. These radical Republicans, or Radicals as they were called, were in the minority but soon they grew stronger. In 1864 they took possession of the State government. They framed a new constitution in 1865, freed the slaves immediately, and disqualified from voting and holding office practically all Missourians

who opposed them. They kept control until 1870. As a result of their policy, a new party called the Liberal Republican was formed by many of the old Republicans and Union men. Other Republicans and Union men combined with old Whigs and old Union Democrats and formed a new Democratic party. The new Democratic party could do little by itself but it did all it could to help the Liberal Republicans. Finally, in 1870 the Liberal Republicans defeated the Radicals.

The rule of the Radicals was so extreme and harsh and was so hated by the majority of Missourians that its memory did much eventually to place and keep in power the Democratic party for thirty years. Again the large war debt of Missouri and her railroad debt made taxes very high between 1865 and 1870. This caused Missourians to place in their new constitution of 1875 restrictions on levying taxes and contracting debts. Since 1870 Missouri has feared high taxes and for years much of this fear was based on her experience during the decade from 1861 to 1870.

Again, before considering this period in detail, it should be remembered that the elections of 1860 in Missouri showed that Missourians stood for compromise, conservatism, and peace, and did not approve either the radical proslavery or the radical antislavery party. During this period party names meant little or nothing. Issues meant everything. During this period the conservatives were victorious in the beginning. Then the prosouthern radicals had their way in making the old State government join the South. Three years later the antislavery radicals had their way in taking the control of the new provisional State government from the Union conservatives, in emancipating the slaves, and in disfranchising the majority of the voters in Missouri. In short, the period began with the conservatives in power. Then the radicals, although always in the minority, obtained control, and in 1870 the conservatives again returned.

## MISSOURI FOR COMPROMISE AND CONSERVATISM

The State election of 1860 showed that Missourians were for compromise and conservatism. In reality both the new governor and the largest single faction of the Legislature were pro-southern. Governor Claiborne F. Jackson of Howard county, was a native of Kentucky. He was a successful merchant and soon went into politics where he achieved success in both houses of the Legislature. He was one of the new Democrat leaders who had helped defeat Benton. Just before his inaugural address to the Legislature, South Carolina had seceded (Dec. 21, 1860). In this address, he favored Missouri joining the South if the Union were dissolved and he recommended calling a State convention to consider the relation of Missouri to the Union. However, Governor Stewart in his farewell address at the same time urged Missouri to stand by the Union. What would Missouri do?



CLAIBORNE F. JACKSON

The Legislature did not want to decide a problem so important. It, accordingly, called a state-wide election of delegates to a State Convention to consider this question. The pro-southern leaders hoped the people would elect pro-southern delegates, the Union leaders wanted Union delegates. Both sides were active. The Missouri leader of the new Republican party was Frank P. Blair of St. Louis. He had been a Democrat and a follower of Benton. He did not oppose slavery but he did oppose slavery in the territories. Above all things he was an unconditional Union man. He was born in Kentucky. On coming to St. Louis he practiced law but soon

drifted into politics. He was a remarkable man, one of the greatest Missouri has produced. His father had been an influential politician in Washington, D. C., under President Jackson, and his brother became a member of President Lincoln's cabinet. Frank P. Blair now worked unceasingly to keep Missouri in the Union.

The vast majority of Missourians wanted to see the Union preserved. (They hoped to see a compromise between the North and the South. Part of them including all the Republicans and a number of the northern Democrats and some old Whigs, were "unconditional Union men." They were determined that Missouri should remain in the Union at any cost. Blair was their leader. The larger part of the Union men, however, were "conditional Union men." They wanted the Union preserved but they would not agree to keeping Missouri in the Union at any cost. They said that Missouri might even join the South under certain causes, but they would not pledge Missouri to join the South even if compromise failed. In short, they were for the Union but not for it under all circumstances. These "conditional Union men" included the great mass of Missourians. Since they were for the Union, they worked with the "unconditional Union men" to that extent. Under Blair's leadership a Union ticket was put out. Opposing them was a small group which favored immediate secession. The election was held in February 1861. The Union ticket won by an overwhelming majority.) Missouri had again decided for compromise and conservatism and for the preservation of the Union.

#### THE STATE CONVENTION FOR COMPROMISE AND CONSERVATISM AT ITS FIRST MEETING—MARCH 1861

Missouri never had a state convention which more accurately represented the wishes of her citizens on a great issue than did the first meeting of the State Convention of 1861. The people had elected their ablest leaders. The Convention met

in Jefferson City and after electing Sterling Price president adjourned to St. Louis. Price was undoubtedly the most popular man in Missouri. He had won honor in the Mexican War, had been trusted by Benton and anti-Benton men, and had made Missouri a good governor. He was a conservative, conditional Union man. A committee on resolutions was appointed. Its chairman was Hamilton R. Gamble, of St. Louis, an able, conservative, conditional Union man. He was respected by all. Another leader of the conditional Union delegates was John B. Henderson, of Pike county. Certainly the Convention was under able leadership.

The resolution committee presented several resolutions. The three important ones were: first, that at present there was no sufficient cause for Missouri to secede; second, that Missouri would support all attempts at compromise between the North and the South; and third, that both the North and the South should avoid civil war. The Convention adopted these resolutions, which undoubtedly reflected the wishes of most Missourians. The Convention also decided not to dissolve but merely to adjourn subject to call by a permanent committee, which it appointed.

The Convention at this meeting was carefully feeling its way. Its resolutions spoke for the Union, compromise, and peace. It was, as were Missourians, a conditional Union body. It did not openly stand for the Union under all circumstances, but on the other hand, it did not stand for secession even if compromise failed. It was simply a conservative body wanting peace and preservation of the Union. It would not even say what Missouri would do in case a compromise failed. Missouri herself did not know. The two minority parties knew what they wanted Missouri to do. The prosouthern men of the State government favored compromise but did not think it was possible. They believed war would come and then they wanted Missouri to secede and join the South. Governor Jackson and Lieutenant Governor Reynolds were their leaders.

The unconditional Union men, largely Republicans, wanted Missouri to stand and fight for the Union if war came. Frank P. Blair was their leader. Events soon occurred which swept all Missourians, even the conditional Unionists, into one or the other of these two opposing sides. The real political struggle for Missouri was now at hand.

#### THE SPRING OF 1861 AND THE CAPTURE OF CAMP JACKSON

The State convention adjourned, subject to future call, on March 22nd. The Legislature adjourned on the 28th. The southern sympathizers were much stronger in the Legislature than in the Convention. These southern leaders in the Legislature had tried to pass a bill reorganizing the State militia whereby the State could be better armed but in this they failed. The kind of delegates elected to the Convention showed that Missouri wanted peace, not war. An effort was also made in the Legislature to re-elect Senator James S. Green, an avowed secessionist. He had made a remarkably able senator but owing to his open sympathy for the South he was not elected. Waldo P. Johnson, of St. Clair county, was elected. Senator Johnson was a lawyer and a Democrat. He was regarded as a Union man and as being more conservative than Green. However, during the war Green took no part except to warn his friends that the North would win. Johnson was expelled from the United States Senate in 1862 and fought for the Confederacy.

While the Legislature and the Convention were passing only conservative laws, hoping for compromise, and calling for peace and neutrality, another set of men were quietly and efficiently preparing to fight to keep Missouri in the Union. These were the unconditional Union men—the American and German Republicans—in St. Louis. Their leader was Frank P. Blair. They not only voted in the day time but they drilled at night. They not only elected Union delegates to the Convention but they organized military clubs to do battle later.

They had no guns but no militia was harder trained. They called themselves the "Wide Awakes" which was a fitting name. Their general purpose was to prepare to fight for the Union and to keep Missouri in the Union. Their immediate purpose was to prevent the United States arsenal at St. Louis, with its 40,000 guns and stores of ammunition, from falling into the hands of the Missouri secessionists and the South. With Blair as their leader they drilled all winter. Soon a new man appeared who was a captain in the United States army. He and Blair worked together. They both had courage, they saw civil war coming, and they were prepared to fight for the Union. This man was Captain Nathaniel Lyon.

Captain Lyon, or General Lyon as he was later called, was not a Missourian but was a native of Connecticut. In fact, he lived in our State only a few months. Still no other man so influenced our history in so short a time as did General Lyon. He was an army man and a graduate of West Point. He opposed slavery and hated secession. His one passion was for the Union. Their first work was to get possession of the St. Louis arsenal and crush any secession movement in Missouri.

Opposing them in their purpose were the leading officials in the State government, especially Governor Jackson and Lieutenant Governor Reynolds. These latter were in favor of the South and they soon became the Missouri leaders in favor of secession. On April 13, 1861, Fort Sumter in South Carolina surrendered to the Confederates. The Civil War had begun. President Lincoln called for 75,000 men. Missouri's quota was 4,000. The request for them was telegraphed to Governor Jackson. Three days later Governor Jackson refused to furnish a man. Four days later the United States arsenal at Liberty, Missouri, with its 11,000 pounds of powder and 1,500 guns, was quietly captured by prosouthern men. Blair and Lyon determined to act.

Early in 1861 Governor Jackson had planned to capture the St. Louis arsenal. Although Blair and Lyon prevented this



by themselves occupying it, a State military camp was established nearby by order of Governor Jackson. This was called Camp Jackson. Its soldiers were prosouthern men. Much of its arms had come from the South. General Lyon regarded it as a secession camp. On May 10th, with 7,000 men, he surrounded it. There were only 700 men in it under General Frost when he surrendered. After being disarmed, they waited in line. Thousands of St. Louis citizens gathered to see Lyon's troops and the prisoners. Some jeered Lyon's men, others threw sticks and stones. The soldiers, many of whom were Germans, became excited. A few shots were fired, then a volley was fired. Some innocent spectators were killed, three of the prisoners, and one of the soldiers. The news flew over Missouri and grew larger and more terrible with each retelling. The St. Louis Germans were reported as robbing and killing everywhere and as being ready to march over Missouri. What was the result? It enabled Governor Jackson to control the Legislature and to arm Missouri; it caused Sterling Price to go with his State for the South; it gave strength to the secessionists in Missouri; it swung hundreds of men into the southern cause; and it virtually marked the opening of civil war in Missouri with both sides determined to fight it out.

The Legislature, which had been in special session since May 2nd, now immediately passed a military bill reorganizing the State Militia on a war basis. The bill was passed within thirty minutes after the Camp Jackson news was telegraphed to Jefferson City. A few days later it appropriated over two million dollars to prepare Missouri for defence. Neither of these measures could have been passed had there been no Camp Jackson affair. However, so angry and excited was the State that a formal act of secession might have been passed if the people had not referred this subject to the Convention.

Both sides in Missouri now prepared for war. General Price offered his services to the Missouri State Government. He was appointed commander of the State troops. General Lyon and Blair were also busy. Each side was arming. Compromise was attempted, but finally all peaceful effort failed. War in Missouri was openly accepted by both sides on June 11, 1861. On that day three State officials met with three Union officials at the Planters Hotel in St. Louis. The two opposing leaders were Governor Jackson and General Lyon. Governor Jackson proposed to keep Missouri absolutely neutral, aiding neither the North nor the South, and repelling all attempts at invasion. He virtually proposed abandonment of secession and of aid to the South. In return he asked that the Federal Government disarm the Home Guards (Blair's "Wide Awakes") and not extend further its military control over Missouri. Lyon refused. He regarded Missouri as part of the United States and as subject to the authority of the United States. Where his Government was concerned he would not agree to or grant a single concession. Governor Jackson now wanted peace and neutrality for Missouri. In this he probably represented the majority of Missourians. General Lyon wanted no neutrality for Missouri. The National Government to him must be free to act. This meant war. The story of that war will be told under "A Century of Military Missouri."

#### GOVERNOR JACKSON AND SECESSION

Within twenty-four hours after the meeting at the Planters Hotel, Governor Jackson issued a proclamation calling for 50,000 volunteers. He soon went to Boonville and then turned south. Battles were now being fought on Missouri soil between the Missouri State troops under General Price and the Union troops under General Lyon. But Missouri and even her old State Government had not formally seceded. Governor Jackson issued a call for a special session of the Legislature to meet at Neosho, Mo., on October 21, 1861. Only a few mem-

bers met. They passed an act of secession declaring Missouri's withdrawal from the Union. The United States Government never regarded Missouri as out of the Union, but the Confederacy accepted this secession act as legal. The secession legislature elected John B. Clark, Sr., and R. L. Y. Peyton to the Confederate Senate and eight men to the Confederate House, at Richmond, Virginia. Missouri was thereafter always represented in the Confederate Congress and some of these men later played a very important part in Missouri's political history. This legislature adjourned to Cassville and then disbanded. After this session, all Missourians who fought for the South were called Confederates, before this they had been called members or soldiers of the State Guard.

Governor Jackson went south and died at Little Rock, Ark., on December 6, 1862. Lieutenant Governor Reynolds now became the Confederate governor of Missouri. He had no power, however, and made only appointments to the Confederate Congress. The real power was in a new government that had been established by the Convention in July 1861.

#### THE PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT OF MISSOURI, 1861-1864

The State Convention held its second session in Jefferson City beginning July 22, 1861. The members of the old Legislature had dispersed, Governor Jackson and his officials had fled south, and General Price was now at the head of the Missouri State Guards fighting the Union forces. The Convention immediately formed a new State government, called the Provisional Government. Only twenty delegates besides Price had left the Convention and it was now a strong but conservative Union body. It was determined to keep Missouri in the Union and to help preserve the Union. Just as the Camp Jackson affair and the Planters Hotel conference had welded together the prosouthern men so had these welded together the Union men. Both realized that war was now inevit-

able and that one must take his stand for the Union or for the old State Government and the South.

The Convention at this second meeting made Robert Wilson, of Andrew county, president. It declared vacant the offices of governor, lieutenant governor, secretary of state, and the seats of all members of the legislature. On July 30th, it appointed men to fill the first three offices for one year and made provision for electing a legislature but later postponed the election. In fact, the Convention was a Union legislature and the only legislature having power in Missouri until after the November election of 1862.

Hamilton R. Gamble, of St. Louis, was appointed governor and Willard P. Hall, of St. Joseph, lieutenant governor. Both men were finely fitted for these offices at this time. Governor Gamble was a native of Virginia. He was a lawyer and had practiced first in Howard county and later in St. Louis. He had served Missouri as secretary of state, as a legislator, and as a member of the Missouri Supreme Court. He had been a Whig, then a conditional Union



HAMILTON R. GAMBLE

man, and was now a conservative but determined Union man. He was religious, honest, and able. He commanded the respect of all conservatives and even most radicals. Willard P. Hall was a native of Virginia. He was a lawyer of high ability. He was a man of education, being a graduate of Yale. He had served Missouri in the Mexican War and in Congress. He was a strong but conservative Union man. On the death of Governor Gamble in January 1864, he became governor and served one year. The Missouri



WILLARD P. HALL

conservatives now had a Union government, moderate and wisely guided. The Convention also declared void the new militia law of the old legislature.

The provisional government had the support of all conservatives. It had at first three great problems to solve. It needed money but taxes could not be secured because the State was in confusion and war. It solved this by issuing and selling bonds. Again, some of the civil officers were not loyal supporters of the new government. It solved this when the Convention held its third meeting, in October 1861. At this meeting an ordinance was passed requiring all officers to take an oath of loyalty to both the United States government and the Missouri provisional government. Those officers who refused to take this oath were ousted and their places were filled with loyal men. This ordinance also provided that any person taking this oath before December 17, 1861, would be exempt from arrest for offenses previously committed against the provisional government. Many took this oath of loyalty. Finally, it was difficult to enforce the laws of the State, keep the courts open, and give her citizens a fair jury trial. Missouri was now under martial law, laid down and enforced by military officers. This problem was never fully solved until peace was declared in 1865.

Soon another problem arose. Missouri's two United States senators, Trusten Polk and Waldo P. Johnson, had gone with the South and both were expelled from the United States Senate on charges of disloyalty on January 10, 1862. In the absence of Governor Gamble, two new senators were appointed by Lieutenant Governor Hall, until the Legislature could fill

the vacancies. But Missouri now had no legislature and no date had been set for electing one. The Convention had postponed such an election fearing a new legislature might overturn much which had been done to keep Missouri strongly supporting the Union. Not all Missourians were loyal to the new government, and the Convention was not taking chances. However, it was becoming clear that an election must be held at least to elect a legislature and congressmen. The people had supported the Convention even though many of its acts could be excused only on the basis of necessity but would the people continue to support it on that basis in the future? It had been elected in February 1861 to consider the relations of Missouri to the Union. Since July 1861 it had created the executive department of a new government and had itself really become the legislative department without restriction on its power. In exercise of powers it was a convention, legislature and government combined. A State election of some kind was becoming important. Moreover, a new issue, was quickly rising. This was the question of emancipation, or freeing the slaves.

The Convention met a fourth time on call of Governor Gamble, June 2, 1862. It provided for a general election in November, 1862, of congressmen and members of the legislature. A test oath was required of all voters. This was the first real voter's test oath in Missouri and, although strict, it was mild compared to a later one. It required all voters to swear allegiance to the United States Government and not to give aid to its enemies or to those of the provisional government. It further required each voter to swear that he had not taken up arms against either of these two governments since December 17, 1861. (The date of the first oath of allegiance.) This oath was also required of all elective and appointive civil officers, jurymen, attorneys, preachers, and teachers. The Convention thereby disqualified all voters who had not been loyal Union men since December 17, 1861. Only loyal Union

men could now hold office, vote, serve on juries, practice law, preach, or teach. Missouri was rapidly being welded into a strong Union state with her government in the control of Union men, but these men were still moderate and conservative compared to those who came later. The Convention did not include the state offices in the November 1862 election. Instead, it decided that Governor Gamble and Lieutenant Governor Hall should hold office for a full four year term, i. e., until the 1864 election. At this meeting of the Convention the new issue of emancipation first rose to prominence. An ordinance providing for gradual emancipation was presented but was voted down by the Convention by a large majority. It was this issue of emancipation, however, that kept growing stronger and stronger until it forced the conservative Union men in Missouri to compromise and finally forced them out of power and replaced them with the radicals. In short, it was the question of emancipation which gave rise to two new parties in Missouri, the conservatives and the radicals. The question is so important and its history is so significant that it will be considered under a separate heading in this chapter.

The main issue in the November 1862 election in Missouri was emancipation. A large majority of the members elected to the Legislature favored some kind of emancipation. They were divided on the kind, whether immediate or gradual. However, they could do nothing, since the Missouri constitution of 1820 prohibited the Legislature from emancipating the slaves without giving compensation to or obtaining the consent of their owners. Missouri at this time had no funds available for this purpose even had the members agreed on the method. So the Legislature decided to leave this issue to the old Convention of 1861.

The Legislature then proceeded to elect John B. Henderson, of Pike county (now of St. Louis), and B. Gratz Brown, of St. Louis, to the United States Senate. Senator Henderson was one of two men who had been appointed to the United

States Senate by Lieut. Gov. Hall in 1862, the other was Robert Wilson of Andrew county. Senator Wilson was a native of Virginia. He served Missouri as a soldier, State senator, and United States senator. He had been a Whig and was now a Union man. He was a lawyer. Senator Henderson was a native of Virginia. He had been a Democrat, then a conditional Union man, but was now one of the strong conservative Union men in the Convention. He was a very able lawyer. In Congress he served with marked success and was the author of the 13th amendment to the United States Constitution freeing the slaves. B. Gratz Brown was born in Kentucky. He was a cousin of Frank P. Blair and of General Joseph Shelby, the famous Missouri Confederate cavalry leader. Both Blair and Brown became unconditional Union men but were now classed as conservatives on the question of emancipation. Brown later became one of the leaders of the Liberal Republican movement in Missouri after the Civil War. He was a journalist and an able one. This Legislature held a second session in November 1863 and on February 13, 1864, passed an act providing for the people to vote in November 1864 on the question of holding a constitutional convention. The people in that election approved the proposition.

On January 31, 1864, Governor Gamble died. He had wrecked his health trying to give Missouri a moderate government in time of war. He had done all he could to keep the radicals from getting control because he feared what their rule would be in Missouri. He was truly a noble character. On his death Governor Hall became acting governor and served until after the election in 1864. He was the last of the old, conservative provisional government of Missouri.

#### EMANCIPATION, 1863-1865

Although Missouri was a slave state with 115,000 slaves in 1860, there had always been some sentiment against slavery. Moreover, Missouri's slaves were not increasing so fast as her



white population. This had been true since 1830, when Missouri's slaves had been 21% as large in number as her white population, while in 1860 they were only 11% as large. Over two-thirds of these slaves were in a very few counties along the Missouri and the Mississippi river and the rest of the slaves were so sparsely scattered as to have little influence on a big political issue. Again, slavery was not adapted to Missouri agriculture. Slaves are profitable only on big plantations. But Missouri never adopted the plantation system. The only two Missouri crops in which slaves could very profitably be used were tobacco and hemp; and only certain sections of Missouri were adapted to these crops. Finally, Missouri's population was changing. Her northern and her German settlers of the '50s were not proslavery men. Usually they were against slavery. Even many southern born Missourians did not approve of slavery but owing to its existence here they kept quiet.

After the war opened slavery in Missouri practically came to an end. It was now an easy matter for a slave to run away into a free state or escape to the Union army. The demand for emancipation grew and conditions were such as to present little opposition. When General Fremont came to Missouri in 1861 to command the Federal army, he issued a proclamation freeing the slaves of all owners in arms against the United States. This immediately aroused the people. It was premature. President Lincoln at once disapproved it and soon Fremont was removed from Missouri. President Lincoln wanted to keep the loyalty of the border states like Kentucky and Missouri. He realized that emancipation might become an issue. During the winter of 1861 and 1862 he advocated paying the owners for their slaves in these border states and a bill nearly passed both houses of Congress in December 1862 providing for this in Missouri. If it had passed, Missouri would very likely have supported it.

Although the question of emancipation had been voted down in the State Convention in June 1862, the Legislature elected in November 1862 was in favor of emancipation. But it refused to consider the issue owing to the 1820 constitutional provisions. The Legislature left this to the State Convention. In the meantime President Lincoln had issued his preliminary Emancipation Proclamation in September 1862, and his final one on January 1, 1863. These did not free the slaves in the border states but they did much to aid emancipation sentiment there. The leaders in the State Convention and also Governor Gamble were in favor of gradual emancipation. They feared the effect on public opinion and on the public safety of immediate emancipation. They realized, however, that a determined group of radicals, who were loyal Union men, were going to work hard for the immediate destruction of slavery. To prevent the radicals from doing this, the State Convention was convened for the fifth and last time in June 1863. It adopted a resolution of gradual emancipation freeing all slaves after July 4, 1870. Instead of appeasing the radicals this action only aroused them to greater activity. They not only opposed this resolution and the longer existence of slavery but they now opposed Governor Gamble's government. They held a Radical political convention in Jefferson City where they adopted resolutions requesting Governor Gamble to resign. They approved the vigorous prosecution of the war by the United States government and President Lincoln's emancipation proclamation. They recommended that negro troops be employed, and requested the State Legislature to call a constitutional convention to free the slaves at once. They sent a delegation to confer with President Lincoln or rather to criticise the way the war was being conducted in Missouri. President Lincoln refused to interfere further with slavery although he sympathized with them.

The fight was now on between the conservatives and the radicals. The names Democrat and Republican meant nothing

now. All who could vote were for the Union and against slavery. In the general election of 1864 the Radical Republicans, or Radicals as they were called, were victorious. They elected the governor and a majority of the Legislature. At the same time the people voted to hold a constitutional convention. The end of the conservative Union provisional government of Missouri had come. Missouri was now to have six years of Radical Rule.

#### THE CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION OF 1865 AND RULE OF THE RADICALS, 1864-1870

The November 1864 election gave the Radicals control of the Missouri Legislature and of the Executive Department, and authorized the election of delegates to a new constitutional convention. To complete their control of Missouri, the Radicals needed only to elect Radical delegates and get possession



THOMAS C. FLETCHER

of the State Judiciary, i. e., the Supreme and circuit courts. They soon accomplished these latter two and as a result remained in power until 1870. The new governor was Thomas C. Fletcher, the first native Missourian to hold this office. He was born in Jefferson county, Missouri, had received a common school education, and was a lawyer. He had long opposed slavery, had early become a Republican, and had served in the Union army. He was re-elected governor in 1866 and served until 1868. He was Missouri's

first Republican governor. Governor Fletcher was a Radical and carried out the will of the Radicals.

The Civil War had practically ended in Missouri but the State was not at peace. The law was not enforced in many

parts of the State and in other parts its method of enforcement did not give justice. Taxes were high and kept increasing. Missouri had a large railroad and a large war debt to pay. Bandits were still present in some counties. Soldiers from both Northern and Southern armies were returning after the war. Everything was unsettled, people were discontented and discouraged, the Southern states were undergoing the pains and sufferings of reconstruction, and radical men were in control of the National government and the State government. Many men in the North although not a majority hated and distrusted the men of the South. Some feared that the South would resort to arms as soon as possible. Others wanted to take revenge on the beaten foe for the sufferings and cost caused during the war. When war comes to a country there usually is first great enthusiasm. As it progresses, this gives place to waves of depression in defeat and of elation in victory. Later comes stern determination. When the war ends the victors are usually filled with joy and the defeated are humble in sorrow. Then comes the real test. Will the victors deal generously or severely with the foe? It takes great courage to deal generously for it demands that faith and trust be placed in those against whom the war was waged, the enemy. Most countries have failed in this great test and bitterness and hatred grow instead of faith, hope, and lasting peace. Perhaps the finest example of a nation meeting this test successfully was the United States after having defeated Spain. To-day there are no hard feelings between victorious America and defeated Spain. Our country had faith and trust.

The Radicals in Missouri in 1865, although some were men of high ability, did not have faith in their fellow citizens. They were possibly honest in their convictions in the beginning but they were wrong in many of their methods. Finally, convictions gave place to policy and government positions. The radical emancipationist and radical loyalist became the radical

politician, his leaders left him, and his fellow citizens finally overthrew him.

The delegates elected to the new constitutional convention met in St. Louis on January 6, 1865. It was controlled by the Radicals who elected Arnold Krekel, of St. Charles, president, and Charles D. Drake, of St. Louis, vice-president. Drake was the leading power in this convention. He was a native of Ohio. He had served as a cadet in the United States navy and later had practiced law in Ohio, Illinois, and St. Louis. He was a very able lawyer and legal author. He had served in the old State Convention from 1861 to 1863; was the leader in the constitutional convention of 1865; was elected Missouri's United States senator in 1867; and became chief justice of the United States Court of Claims in 1870. The constitution framed by the convention was correctly called the "Drake Constitution." On January 11, 1865, just five days after convening, the convention by a vote of 60 to 4, immediately abolished slavery in Missouri. Governor Fletcher issued a proclamation to that effect on the day following. The emancipation ordinance was never submitted to the people, the convention having voted against such submission. Thus Missouri emancipated her own slaves eleven months before the Thirteenth Amendment to the United States Constitution was adopted.

Having settled the slavery question the convention then framed a new constitution for Missouri. This constitution was both good and bad. It was good in being more modern and progressive in some respects than the old one. It dealt with corporations, which were then coming into prominence in Missouri's economic life. It contained improved provisions on education. Of doubtful value was the changing of the governor's term from four to two years. But its good character was nullified by its bad features. These features related to voting, office holding, preaching, teaching, and practicing law. They all came under a new test oath which was well called "The Ironclad Oath." By this oath an at-

tempt was made to exclude from voting, office, or public influence all except the old unconditional Union men. It provided that no man could vote or hold office unless he took an oath that he had *never* by word or deed given aid or sympathy to the South or to those fighting against the United States Government. This oath was also required of all lawyers, teachers, and ministers, before they could practice their professions. An oath of loyalty and allegiance was proper but not an *ex post facto* law applying to the past, present, and future. Many who at first in 1861 had sided with the old State Government against the National Government had later, after December 17, 1861, supported the provisional government. This oath included them the same as the fighting Confederates. Besides, the war was over. Missouri needed a spirit of good will, not test oaths. There were further severe penalties attached to violation of this oath or to falsely taking the oath. Fines and even imprisonment were set forth. These were like the cracker on a whip and stung the pride of a majority of Missourians. This oath ruined an otherwise good constitution, helped defeat the radical party in charge of the government, and was repealed by the Missouri voters in November 1870. About all it accomplished was to breed ill will in Missouri, disfranchise a majority of Missourians, and help keep the Radicals in power until 1870. Its effects, however, were greater. It split the old Union party and gave rise to the Liberal Republicans. It gave strength through adversity to the new Democratic party and its memory helped keep this new party in power for years.

The new constitution was adopted by the convention on April 10, 1865, by a vote of 38 to 13. Although this vote showed a large majority for the constitution, it also revealed a number of delegates who opposed it. In fact, many of the Radicals did not approve the "Ironclad Oath". The convention decided to submit the constitution to a vote of the peo-

ple on June 6th but the Radicals made certain that it would be adopted and go into force by providing two things. First, only those could vote on the constitution who took the "Ironclad Oath". Second, the convention by ordinance threw out of office all judges and most of the county officers. The governor was given power to fill these vacancies by appointment until a general election was held. This was called the "Ousting Ordinance". It was not submitted to the people. This "Ousting Ordinance" had been adopted March 17th. Its purpose was clear, The Radicals thereby obtained control of the local offices in the county and of the State Judiciary from the circuit judges to the Supreme Court judges. There was now no chance of the State Supreme Court declaring null and void any of the provisions of the new constitution including the "Ironclad Oath", the "Emancipation Ordinance", the "Ousting Ordinance", or the future acts of the Radicals. The Radicals by the election of 1864, the constitution of 1865, and the "Ousting Ordinance", obtained complete control of the government machinery in Missouri. Despite all of these precautions, the new constitution was adopted by the people by a majority of less than 2,000 votes. Although the campaign for and against the constitution had been very bitter, thereby indicating that a large vote would be cast, still so strict was the "Ironclad Oath" that only 60% as many votes were cast as had been cast in November 1864. This meant that 40% of the Union voters of November 1864 had either stayed at home through fear or disgust or they could not honestly take the "oath". There is little wonder that opposition against the Radicals grew fast. Besides, the Radicals had just begun to rule. They had other plans which were soon to become laws.

The Radical Legislature, elected in November 1864, met again in November 1865. The constitution of 1865 was now in force. It contained a provision, not mentioned before, which gave the Legislature authority to enact a system of

registering by districts the names of all qualified voters. This registry provision contained even more power than the "Ironclad Oath" and, eventually, caused even more opposition. The Legislature proceeded to exercise this power. It passed the "Registry Act" of 1866. The State was divided into small districts. Over each district was placed a superintendent of registration *elected* by the people. These superintendents registered the names of the qualified voters. Only such persons could vote. If the superintendent refused to register a person, that person could *not* vote. This new officer was the sole judge of voters. He had unlimited power. The State courts and the State government supported him. The bad part of the law was the way in which it was enforced. Radical superintendents, and they constituted the majority, registered only Radical voters. Other persons now had no voice in their government. The Radicals, although constituting only a minority of the people, ruled the State.

But the "Registry Act" of 1866 and the other measures mentioned did one good thing. It forced the opposition to organize and co-operate. A new Democratic party appeared. Its leaders were such old Union Democrats as Lewis Bogy and John S. Phelps, both of whom later became governors. They did not have much material to work with since many of the old Union Democrats could not vote or were denied the vote and, of course, under the "Ironclad Oath" all of the old Southern Democrats were without the vote. A more important party at this time was the new Conservative Union party. Its leader was the great Union Republican of 1860, Frank P. Blair. Its followers were largely conservative Republicans, who did not approve the new radical laws and methods. Separated, these two new parties could do nothing, so the Democrats agreed to support the Conservative Unionists in the 1866 election. They were easily defeated, however, by the Radicals, who won everything. After this defeat the Conservative Union party ceased to exist. How-



ever, it had served two important purposes, in arousing the opponents of the Radicals and in strengthening the new Democratic party.

The Radicals now saw another weakness in the law which might prove their defeat. The "Registry Act" of 1866 made the superintendents of registry *elected* by the people. In some districts Democrats and in other districts Conservative Union men had been elected. This was not good for the cause of the Radicals, so in 1868 a second "Registry Act" was adopted. This act made the superintendents *appointive* by the governor. The governor was a Radical. There was now no weakness in the Radical machinery. Their real weakness was to be in public opinion, which finally triumphed.

The Democrats had now become well organized. Even in 1867 they had elected a Congressman to fill an unexpired term. In the same year the United States Supreme Court declared the "Ironclad Oath" as a qualification for practicing professions, unconstitutional, but as a voting qualification it was still legal. Frank P. Blair and most of the old Conser-

native Unionists and many of the old Whigs now became Democrats. Despite the additions to the Democratic ranks, the Radicals again won in 1868, electing the governor, six of the nine congressmen, and carrying Missouri for Grant. The main cause of their victory was the "Registry Act" of 1868 as it was enforced. Governor McClurg was the second native Missourian to become Missouri's chief executive. He was born in St. Louis county. He had taught school, practiced law, and then be-



JOSEPH W. McCLURG

came a merchant after moving to Camden county. He was an unconditional Union man in 1860. He was the first governor to advocate prohibition by law. There was one surprise in this election. An amendment to the Missouri constitution was defeated which would have given the negro the right to vote. It was badly defeated, showing that many Radicals as well as all Democrats opposed it. Before Missouri could take up this question again, however, the Fifteenth amendment to the United States Constitution was adopted, thereby settling it. The 1868 election marks the high-tide of power of the Radicals. Their downfall was due to a split within their own ranks.

Many of the Radicals were now becoming insurgent. They disapproved of the Radical policies and methods. The foremost leader of the insurgents was a prominent Republican editor who came to Missouri in 1867. He was Carl Schurz, a man of German birth. Through his editorship of the *Westliche Post*, a St. Louis German newspaper, and his wide influence over the Germans in Missouri, he wielded great political power. In 1869 he was elected to the United States Senate. In 1870 he was chairman of the committee on resolutions in the Republican State Convention. His report advocated the removal of all political disabilities, i. e., the "Ironclad Oath", and the adoption by the people of the amendment proposed by the late Legislature granting to all classes the right to vote. A minority report of this committee was made. This report opposed immediate removal of the political disabilities. The minority report was adopted. Schurz and 249 delegates, or about one-third of the total number, withdrew from the convention. These insurgents met, organized, and nominated a full ticket called the Liberal Republican ticket. B. Gratz Brown was their candidate for governor. He was a native of Kentucky and a cousin of Frank P. Blair and General Joseph Shelby. He was a lawyer. During the '50s he had been one of the Benton

leaders and had been an anti-slavery extension man. He had opposed secession and early became a Republican. He had served in the Union army and from 1863 to 1867 he had been one of Missouri's United States senators.

The Democrats did not put out a ticket. They supported the Liberal Republicans, who swept the State by a majority of 41,000. Brown was elected governor. The Democrats elected five congressmen, the Liberals two, and the Radicals three. The Democrats and the Liberals also elected the Legislature. However, the most important result of the election was the adoption by the people of six constitutional amendments removing the political disqualifications on voting. The "Ironclad Oath" was repealed by a vote of 127,000 to 16,000. The power behind the Radicals had been taken away. The Liberal Republican movement spread over the Nation and national organization was perfected in 1872. It advocated lower tariffs and civil service reform. It soon died and the Republican and Democratic parties alone remained as the two great parties. In Missouri, the Liberal Republicans and the Democrats again worked together successfully in the election of 1872. The great work of the Liberal Republicans was in the two elections of 1870 and 1872.

So ended the rule of the Radicals in Missouri. They had had strong leaders and they had exercised almost unlimited power since 1864. They ruined a good constitution with an "Ironclad Oath", which deprived the majority of Missourians from voting and holding office and many men from teaching, preaching and practicing law. They put a blot on a constitutional convention authorized by Missourians by ousting the legally elected judges of the States. They stigmatized themselves by "Registry Acts" which violated the sympathy and the sense of justice of most citizens and which drove from their own ranks the ablest and most influential leaders. Their rule left memories which lived half a century

both to the detriment of themselves, their party, and their State. Still, Missouri actually prospered, grew in wealth, and increased in population during the rule of the Radicals. Taxes were high, but the schools flourished as never before considering the lack of education during four years of war. The first State appropriation was made for the support of the University of Missouri. The agriculture department of the university and the school of mines were established. A board of statistics was created. The state normal schools at Kirksville and Warrensburg, and Lincoln institute at Jefferson City, were founded. A state insurance department was created. A separate State superintendent of public schools was established. Progress was made in paying off the great railroad debts of the '50s and the war debt of the '60s. New settlers, mostly from northern states, poured in and helped develop Missouri's resources. In short, Missouri was prosperous, growing, and advancing rapidly. These things all took place under the rule of the Radicals. The bad things—the "Ironclad Oath," the "Ousting Ordinance," and the "Registry Acts,"—are remembered and they should serve as warnings to future generations. The good things—emancipation of the slaves, rapid payment of the debt, increase in wealth, growth in population, and advancement of education—are also remembered and they should serve as guides. The reason for the failure of the Radicals was this: they could not forgive a fallen foe and trust their fellow-citizens.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. State the difference between the Liberal Republicans and the Radical Republicans.
2. By whom was the new Democratic party formed?
3. How does the election of 1860 prove that Missouri stood for compromise and conservatism?
4. What was the issue for calling a State Convention in 1861?
5. Give the three important resolutions which were adopted by the Convention?

6. In what way did the Convention reflect the public opinion of Missouri?
7. What preparation to keep Missouri in the Union was made by the Unconditional Union men under Blair?
8. What was the effect in Missouri of the capture of Camp Jackson?
9. What were the events which led to the establishment of a provisional government in Missouri?
10. Show how the people were divided in the election of 1862 on the issue of emancipation.
11. Why do you think that slaves were not so profitable in Missouri as in some of the southern states?
12. Why did President Lincoln disapprove General Fremont's emancipation proclamation?
13. Explain the Ironclad Oath; the Ousting Ordinance; and the Registry Acts.
14. Discuss the progress of public welfare during the Rule of the Radicals.
15. Discuss the insurgent movement in the Radical party which gave rise to the Liberal Republican party.

## CHAPTER IV

# THE LIBERAL REPUBLICANS AND THE DEMOCRATIC RETURN TO POWER, 1870-1904

### THE THREE FEATURES OF THIS PERIOD

The period of Missouri politics from 1870 to 1904 had three important features. If these features are remembered it will not be difficult to understand these thirty-four years. In the first place this period marked the growing power of the individual voter. The voter rather than the politician or the statesman said plainly what he wanted. The growing political power of the voters, or the people, made itself felt in several ways. It was reflected in the rise of third parties, that is, new parties other than the Democratic or Republican parties. Including the Liberal Republican party, not less than four "third" parties came into existence during this period. These four new parties were the Liberal Republican party of 1870 and 1872, the Grange (a Farmers' party) or People's party of 1874, the Greenback party of 1880, and the Populist party of 1892. There was also a Prohibition party but it never became strong. Each of the four new parties had a considerable following. Of course, the followers of these new parties had once been followers of one of the old parties. These followers were simply attempting to exercise their political power as voters to obtain something they wanted from or through the government. The growing political power of the voters was also reflected in the fusing or absorbing of these four parties with one or the other of the two old parties or in the latter changing their policies so as to attract the new party. For example, the Democratic party absorbed many of the Liberal Republicans in 1872; the Republican party and the Grangers voted together in 1874; the Democratic party absorbed many of the Green-

backers after 1880; and the Democratic party absorbed the Populists in 1896. In each case the old party had to give something, that is, make a concession. In several cases the old party simply adopted the principle of the new party and the latter went to pieces. However the point to remember is that some of the voters broke away from their old party, organized a new one, and were usually induced to come back by concessions. In case only of the Liberal Republican was a new party successful on election day, but one new party was successful in 1896 in strongly influencing the Democratic party. Finally, the growing power of the voters was seen in the position taken by the people as compared to the position taken by their party leaders. The party leaders now followed or interpreted the people's wishes instead of the people following or interpreting the leaders actions. The old Democracy of Jackson and Benton, and the old Republicanism of Lincoln, were passing. These three men, and there were others, had told the people what the people and the government should do. The people now told their party what was the problem and expected their leaders to solve it. In short, the people, or the voters, were now inclined to dictate and direct, while the leaders were kept busy trying to interpret the people's wishes and solve, or attempt to solve, their problems. It should not be understood that the voter was supreme and the political leader was a mere servant. The party machinery, which was controlled by the leaders, was still powerful in both parties. Again, the ties of party loyalty were strong with the majority of the voters in both parties. The memory of the rule of the Radicals in the sixties and the achievement of the Confederates helped to keep alive the political allegiance of Democrats, and the victory of the Northern armies under a Republican president and the gratitude of the negro population aided in cementing the ties of loyalty to the Republican party. Party loyalty was still the rule but both inside and outside of the two

parties was the growing power of the voter in directing the leaders.

The second feature of this period from 1870 to 1904 is the growing inclination of the people to ask and expect the government to solve their problems. They not only demanded that the government increase its field of service in aiding education, taking care of the insane, and providing for the health and safety of the citizens, but the people wanted it to aid them in solving their economic problems. For example, when in the latter seventies money was high, prices declining, and debts becoming difficult to pay, the people wanted the government to issue more money. Some wanted "greenbacks" or paper money printed by the government and others wanted more silver money coined. Again, when similar conditions came in the nineties, the people demanded more money. Since this was a matter for the national government to decide, it resulted in national politics greatly influencing state politics. However, the people did demand that the state government solve economic problems as the regulation of railroad rates, lowering of taxes, and greater economy in government. Strangely enough although the people wanted their government to do more things and regulate more things, they gave the government less power to do things. The constitution of 1875 contained more restrictions on the government than either the one of 1820 or the one of 1865. During this period the character of most legislation was restrictive and regulative. The former was due to the experiences of the fifties and sixties when both the State and the counties went deeply in debt, which caused high taxes. The regulative legislation was due to the growth of corporations against which the individual unaided could not compete.

The third feature of this period is the dominance of the Democratic party and the growing strength of the Republican party. The Liberal Republican and Democratic parties were successful in 1870 and 1872. From 1872 to 1900 the



Democrats carried the State at all elections except the one in 1894, which was not a general four-year election. However, the Republicans were increasing in strength due to the immigration from Republican states as Iowa, Illinois, and Ohio, where land was higher than in Missouri, and to the emigration of many Missouri Democrats to Texas, Oklahoma, Montana, and the West, where land was cheaper than in Missouri. The following table of votes for governor makes clear the relative strength of the two parties during these years:

### VOTE CAST FOR GOVERNOR IN MISSOURI, 1870-1921

(All figures represent thousands except in the per cent columns. In the "Third" parties column the figures represent the total of all "Third" parties, the party whose name is in parenthesis cast the largest vote of this total.)

Year	Total	% Incr.	Dem.	Repub.	"Third" Parties	Maj.	Plur.	% Plural- ity to To- tal Vote
1870	167	16	104*	63	0	41	41	25
1872	278	66	157*	121	0	36	36	13
1874	262	—6	150	112**		38	38	14
1876	348	33	200	148	0	52	52	15
1880	398	14	208	154	36	9	54	14
1884	437	10	219	208	(Greenback) 10	½	11	3
1888	519	19	256	243	(Prohibition) 20	0	13	2½
1892	541	4	265	235	41	0	30	6
1896	664	23	351	308	(Populist) 5	19	43	6½
1900	684	3	350	318	16	8	32	5
1904	645	—6	327	297	21	5	30	5
1908	716	11	340	356	20	0	16	2
1912	699	—2	337	218	144	0	119	17
1916	785	12	382	380	(Progressive) 23	0	2	¼
1920	1,331	70	581	722	28	57	141	11

\*Democrats and Liberal Republicans.

\*\*Repub. and Grangers (People's Party)

From this table it is seen that from 1870 to 1900 inclusive there were held ten elections for governor. The first

five elections were from 1870 to 1880 inclusive and the Democratic, including the Liberal Republican, candidate received both a majority and a plurality of the votes. The per cent of this plurality vote to the total vote cast was large, varying from thirteen to twenty-five percent. The last five elections were from 1884 to 1900 inclusive and in only two, 1896 and 1900, did the Democratic candidate receive a worthwhile majority and in all five the percent of his plurality vote to the total vote cast was small, varying from two and one-half to six and one-half percent. The reason for this relative decline in the plurality of the Democrats after 1880 was due to the increase in the Republican vote. This increase in turn was due in part to the fact that the Democratic party after 1880 ceased to reward the old Union Democrats and Whigs and turned more and more to the old Confederate Democrats and new Democratic leaders. From 1870 to 1880 the successful candidate for governor either Democrat or Liberal Republican had a Union war record or had not opposed the Union. Three of the five governors had served in the Union army. These naturally obtained the votes of many Union soldiers. When in 1884 the Democratic party candidate was a Confederate general, many of the Union soldiers who either had supported the Democratic Union candidate in 1880 or had not voted, now voted the Republican ticket. They were reinforced by the new Republican settlers from Iowa, Illinois, and Ohio. In short, the strength of the Democrats between 1870 and 1880 lay in their fusion with the Liberal Republicans and in their Union Democratic candidates. After 1880 the strength of the Republican lay in immigrants from Republican states and in the Union soldier voters.

FUSION OF THE LIBERAL REPUBLICANS AND DEMOCRATS,  
1870-1874

The victory of the Liberal Republicans who were supported by the Democrats gave Missouri a strong man for governor in 1870. B. Gratz Brown was a man of courage, conviction, fairness, and education. He was a native of Kentucky and was a cousin of Frank P. Blair and Joseph Shelby. He had practiced law in St. Louis but soon became



B. GRATZ BROWN

an editor. He had been a Benton Democrat, a Republican, an unconditional Union man, and a leader in keeping Missouri in the Union. He was one of the founders of the Liberal Republican party. The "Ironclad Oath" had been abolished by the voters at the 1870 election. On the recommendation of Governor Brown the Legislature amended the registration laws. All Missourians now could vote. During Brown's administration, a state hospital was established in St. Joseph and Frank

P. Blair was appointed United States senator to serve out the term of Senator Drake, who had resigned.

In the election of 1872 the Liberal Republicans and the Democrats again voted together. The state officers were divided, the Democrats getting the larger share including the office of governor. The Democratic candidate selected was Silas Woodson of St. Joseph, who was a lawyer of ability. He was a native of Kentucky, where he had been a Whig. On coming to Missouri he became a Democrat. During the

war he retired from public life and took no part in the struggle. This made him a good compromise candidate without enemies on either side. After the war he had helped organize the new Democratic party. He received about 50% more votes than Brown had received but his Republican opponent received nearly 100% more votes than his Republican predecessor had in 1870. So it is clear that although Woodson was a good compromise candidate he was not a strong candidate since the per-



SILAS WOODSON

centage of his plurality vote to the total vote cast was only 13%, or about half of the percent obtained by Brown. The Republicans although defeated had added greatly to their strength. Of course the total vote cast in 1872 was very large owing to every man being now permitted to vote.

During Woodson's administration the state debt was refunded and the third state normal school, now the state teachers college, was established at Cape Girardeau. The first two state normal schools had been established in 1870 at Kirksville and Warrensburg. In 1873 the problem of electing a United States senator to succeed Frank P. Blair arose. Blair could not be reelected owing to his strong convictions and his courageous political record. He had been a Benton Democrat, a Republican, an unconditional Union man, and later one of the leaders in reorganizing the new Democratic party. In all of his political work he had been fearless and, of course, had made enemies. The Legislature elected a Democrat, Louis V. Bogy, of St. Louis, a man who had taken no part in the war.

The election of 1872 marked the last appearance of the Liberal Republican party both in Missouri and in the nation. This party began in Missouri. Its founder was Carl Schurz. It stood for reconciliation between the North and the South, removal of the political restrictions on voting, lower tariffs, and civil service reform. Its success in Missouri in 1870 in combination with the Democrats led to a national organization in 1872. Its candidate for president in 1872 should have been someone like Brown or Schurz. It nominated Brown for vice-president and Horace Greeley of New York for president. The national convention of the Democrats also nominated both and adopted the Liberal Republican platform. The mistake made was in the presidential candidate, who did not have a strong record and was not popular. Greeley and Brown were defeated in the nation but they carried Missouri. After this the Liberal Republican party disappeared. Some became Democrats and others became Republicans.

#### FUSION OF THE UNION AND CONFEDERATE DEMOCRATS, 1874-1888

By 1874 the Democratic party was composed of men who differed widely from each other in their former political views. They were held together by mutual concessions and by their Democratic loyalty. The two main groups were the Union Democrats, who had stood by and had frequently fought for the Union during the war, and the Confederate Democrats, who had fought in the Confederate army or had sympathized with the Confederate cause. The former group was given the office of governor and many of the appointive offices down to 1880 and the latter group controlled the Legislature and the United States senatorship. These two groups held together well and made a strong combination so long as mutual concessions were given. However, the Confederate group gradually became stronger in the party and

after 1880 control passed to them and to new leaders, who had taken no part in the war. The election returns seem to indicate that when this took place, that is, the ascendancy of the Confederate Democrats, some of the former Union men swung over into the Republican party.

The Democrats nominated Charles H. Hardin of Audrain county for governor in 1874. Hardin was another compromise candidate but his record during the war had been stronger than that of Woodson. He had been a Whig in Kentucky, where he had been born, and on coming to Missouri he had remained a Whig. During the war he had been a Union man and had opposed secession but had taken no active part. After the war he became one of the leaders of the Democratic party. He was a lawyer and a strong supporter of education. The opposition candidate was William Gentry of



CHARLES H. HARDIN

Pettis county, a farmer. He was nominated by the People's party, which was supported by the Grangers and the Republicans. So the opposition party was again a fusion party. The Granger party, or the Farmers' Alliance party, was a farmer's organization which made its first and only important political appearance in 1874. The times were hard, farmers were deeply in debt, money was scarce, prices had been declining since the war except for temporary advances in 1868 and 1872, and a nation-wide panic had occurred in 1873. The year 1874 was one of depression and failure in business. The Grangers or rather the People's party believed that the causes of these bad conditions were the high railroad rates, the money system, the eastern corporations, and

government expenses. They demanded regulation of rates, more money, and lower taxes. However the Democrats were successful. At this election the people by the small majority vote of 283 endorsed a resolution in favor of calling a constitutional convention.

Under Governor Hardin's administration five features are worthy of mention. The depression in business and prices continued. The unalterable laws of economics were now making the people pay for the high cost and waste of the war, for the extravagance and speculation in 1866-1870, and for the ill-advised voting of state and county bonds to build railroads. Moreover, Europe had just been engaged in several wars, which in turn brought depression there, economy on the part of the people, and reduced buying by them of American products. The next feature was the fine progress made in Missouri in bringing about better feeling between the Union and Confederate soldiers and sympathizers. Governor Hardin did much to aid this growth of

good fellowship. The third feature was the election of Francis M. Cockrell of Johnson county to the United States Senate in 1875. This was a victory for the Confederate Democrats as Cockrell had fought bravely for the South in the war. He was a native Missourian and was a man respected and loved by thousands. He served Missouri as United States senator from 1875 to 1905, a period of thirty years, being the first and only Missourian who equalled the senatorial record of the great Benton. The fourth



FRANCIS M. COCKRELL

feature was the creation by the Legislature of a state railroad and warehouse commissioner. This new officer was to

collect data regarding the railroads in Missouri with a view of aiding in their regulation. It was a step toward meeting one of the demands of the People's party for rate regulation.

The most important event was the framing and adoption of the present constitution of Missouri of 1875. The constitution of 1865 had been unpopular owing to its authors and its "Ironclad Oath". The last was removed by the voters in 1870 and opposition to the constitution was dying. It was an excellent document in many ways and the people gradually came to appreciate it. This is shown by the very small majority of only 283 votes cast in 1874 in favor of a new constitutional convention. The new convention met in 1875 with sixty-eight delegates,—sixty Democrats, six Republicans, and two Liberals. To understand the constitution they framed, it is necessary to understand Missouri history especially since 1850, to know the kind of men the delegates were, and to appreciate the business depression which had existed since 1873. The first has already been presented and it may be summed up as regards its worst features in these words,—freedom of the legislature to bond the State, go in debt, issue special charters, and enact special laws; high taxes; and almost unrestricted power of local bodies and of the voters to issue bonds. The delegates were men who had gone through troublesome times including war, high prices, high taxes, speculation, low prices, and depression. Some had lost much of their property, others had suffered through an unlimited government in the sixties, and many, if not all, had felt the pressure of high taxes and scarce money. As a result the delegates were very conservative men. They had more concern for the people and for property than they had for government. They themselves were men of property. They were educated men and hence they were concerned about forwarding education. Finally, the business depression which became acute in 1873 and continued for years was felt by all. Men of education and property became conservative



in depressions. In fact most people do unless they fear loss of everything, then they are inclined to be radical in politics. So from these brief statements, there was only one kind of a constitution that could have been framed in 1875—a conservative constitution with restrictions on the government's powers and on the people's powers as voters for bonds and taxes, with protections for the individual against the government and against other individuals, and with provisions for education. This was the kind of constitution actually framed in 1875 and adopted that year by the people by the large majority of 76,688 votes.

The constitution of 1875 will not be examined. It was very long, containing 25,000 words. It was adequately fitted for the times and it has served Missouri well for nearly half a century. Its restrictions on the government and on the voters, as regards taxes and bonds, have been both beneficial and harmful. It has prevented undue expense and extravagance in government, but it has frequently prevented progress. It has given the individual many safeguards but frequently the courts could not therefore easily or quickly give justice. Some of these defects have been remedied by amendments and in 1922 a new constitutional convention was elected which drafted for adoption of the people further revisions. One clause in the constitution of 1875 changed the governor's term to four years and another provided that at least one-fourth of the state revenue be set aside for the public schools.

In 1876 the Democrats nominated for governor their able Civil War veteran candidate, General John S. Phelps, a Union Democrat of Springfield. Phelps was a native of Connecticut. He had been a consistent Democrat before, during, and after the war. During the war he had commanded a Union regiment. He was a lawyer of ability. He was one of Missouri's strong governors and received the largest majority vote cast for a Missouri governor from

1840 to 1920. The most marked features during Governor Phelps's administration were the rapid recovery of the country to prosperity, demand for currency reform, financial support of the schools, strikes, and the election of George G. Vest to the United States Senate. The depression which had begun in 1873 continued for five years, but by 1879 prosperity again began to appear and continued five years. Business became better. However, the

price of corn was low until 1881, being around fifty cents a bushel, and the people were still in debt. This brought about



JOHN S. PHELPS

a demand for more money and a reform in the currency system. In 1878 the Democratic party advocated the issue of greebacks and the unlimited coinage of silver to give the country more money. One of Missouri's congressmen, Richard P. Bland, of Laclede county, was the leader in Congress on this reform. He became head of the free silver branch of the Democratic party from 1873 until 1896. In that year, 1896, the Democratic party adopted as part of its platform this principle of silver coinage but did not nominate Bland for president. Bland was congressman from 1873 to 1900 excepting one term. He was a remarkable man, able, honest, and



MONUMENT TO RICHARD P. BLAND

courageous. Of course the money question was a national problem but it had great influence on state politics. Greater financial support was given the public schools and the state educational institutions during these years. Railroad construction greatly increased in Missouri, 867 miles being built. Strikes increased in Missouri, but fortunately no deaths



GEORGE G. VEST

resulted and order was soon restored. The Democrats in 1879 again elected to the United States Senate a Confederate veteran, George G. Vest, of Sedalia. Senator Vest served until 1903. He had served under General Price and had represented Missouri in the Confederate Senate. He was an able lawyer and an orator of first rank. Senator Cockrell and he were close friends and represented Missouri well in the United States Senate. In 1879 the State

created a board of immigration to attract settlers to Missouri and a bureau of labor statistics to gather data on labor and industry in Missouri.

The Democrats put forward as their candidate for governor in 1880 another Civil War veteran who had fought for the Union, Thomas T. Crittenden of Warrensburg. He was elected by only a fair majority vote but he received the largest plurality vote given a Missouri governor down to 1912. This was the last election until 1896 in which a Democratic candidate for governor received a majority vote worth mentioning and it was the last time down to 1912 that any man's percent of plurality vote to the total vote ran over ten per cent. This shows that the two parties were getting more and more equal in followers, although the State went Democratic for a quarter of a century longer. The "third"

political party at this election was the Greenback party, which cast a considerable vote. It soon went to pieces as the Democrats had already taken a stand for more money.

Governor Crittenden, who was a lawyer and a partner of Cockrell, was a native of Kentucky. During the war he had fought for the Union, and after the war, like Blair and Phelps, he had become a strong Democrat. Under his administration Missouri enjoyed great prosperity. The thrift and saving of the people during the hard times of the seventies now began to bear fruit. Fortunately the State government, instead of using this prosperity to incur debt, proceeded to reduce the old debt.

Railroad building increased, bringing capital to Missouri, work for her people, and better transportation for country and city. The State created a bureau of mines and mine inspection in 1881 which indicates that Missouri was rapidly advancing in the mining industry.

In the 1884 election the Democrats for the last time had a Civil War veteran as their candidate for governor, John S. Marmaduke, son of Governor M. M. Marmaduke. But this time the candidate and the majority of the State officers were ex-Confederates, while Governor Phelps was an ex-Union man and so were the



THOMAS T. CRITTENDEN



JOHN S. MARMADUKE

majority of the State officers. Governor Marmaduke was elected by only 11,000 plurality, and his majority was less than a thousand. It is significant that the Democrat vote showed an increase of only 5% over 1880 while the Republican vote increased 35%. The "third" party in this election was the Prohibition party but its vote was small. However, the effect of prohibition sentiment was seen in the Legislature when it passed a "local option law" in 1887 under which a large part of Missouri eventually went dry.

Governor Marmaduke was a native of Missouri, having been born in Saline county. He had received a fine education and was a man of business ability. Before his election he had lived in St. Louis. He died while in office in 1887



ALBERT P. MOREHOUSE

and Lieutenant Governor Albert P. Moorehouse, of Nodaway county, served the remainder of the term. The first two years of this administration were years of depression but prosperity came again in 1887 and continued for several years. The Legislature passed a number of important acts during these four years, in addition to the local option law. A law was passed regulating the railroads to prevent their pooling to keep up the rates and to forbid their charging more for short hauls than for long hauls.

A new railroad and warehouse commission was created. The State capitol was remodelled at a cost of \$220,000. The agricultural experiment station was established as part of the college of agriculture. The training school for boys was established at Boonville, the industrial school for girls was established at Chillicothe, and a state hospital was established at Nevada. Missouri was advancing in taking care of the

public needs of her citizens. Much of this appreciation of Missouri's needs was due to Governor Marmaduke, who was a fearless and able worker for the people.

THE NEW DEMOCRATIC LEADERS, 1888-1904  
and

FUSION OF THE DEMOCRATS AND THE POPULISTS, 1896

The year 1888 marked the rise to power of a new group of leaders in control of the Democratic party in Missouri state politics. Many of the Civil War veterans had passed away and many more had retired or were retired from active public life. Senators Cockrell and Vest remained in the United States Senate but these alone represented the old veterans of the war.

The Democratic candidate for governor in 1888 was David R. Francis of St. Louis.

He was a native of Kentucky and had received his higher education in Missouri. He had been a successful man, both in business and politics. Although St. Louis was Republican and Francis was a Democrat he had been elected mayor in 1885. He carried the State in 1888 by a plurality of 13,000 but he did not receive a majority of the votes cast. During his administration the Australian ballot law for voting was adopted, the governor's mansion was repaired, and a state school text book commission was created



DAVID R. FRANCIS

providing for uniform text books. The farmers began to feel the effects of hard times and low prices during the latter part of this term and they again organized. By the next general election they had become powerful as a "third" party.

Governor Francis later held many important public positions, serving in the cabinet, as president of the Louisiana Purchase Exposition in St. Louis in 1904, and as ambassador to Russia in 1915.

The campaign of 1892 was fought on the tariff issue. This was the issue in Missouri although the State could do nothing to solve it since it was a national problem. The



WILLIAM J. STONE

Democratic candidate for governor was William Joel Stone of Vernon county and the Republican candidate was William Warner of Kansas City. Both had served in Congress and both later became United States senators from Missouri. A strong "third" party came out under the name of the Populist or People's party, and it cast 37,000 votes. It was for cheap money. Governor Stone was elected by a plurality of 30,000 but he did not receive a majority. It is noteworthy that in this election the

Republicans' vote decreased by 8,000 for the first time since 1874.

Governor Stone was a native of Kentucky. He had received a liberal education and he became an able lawyer. He was one of the most successful leaders of the Democratic party in Missouri. He later served as United States senator from 1903 until his death in 1918. During his administration the silver question became more and more pressing. From 1893 to 1896 the country had the worst depression since the seventies. This may have influenced the off-election of 1894 when Missouri was carried in a landslide by the Republicans. The Democratic party advocated the free coinage of silver as a remedy. This had long been advocated by America's

greatest free silver authority, Missouri's congressman, Richard P. Bland. This also met the approval of the Populists, who in 1896 joined the Democrats. The important State measures passed during these four years was the creation of a new state banking department, provision for building and loan supervision, and increased support of the educational institutions.

The campaign of 1896 was waged entirely on the money issue. The Democratic party adopted the principle and work of Bland but nominated W. J. Bryan of Nebraska for president. As in 1872 Missouri had furnished the issue but was denied the candidate. The Populists went over to the Democrats, who on the issue of more silver money carried Missouri for governor by a majority of 19,000 and by a plurality of 43,000. The nation went Republican. In Missouri the Republican vote increased 31% and the Democratic vote increased 32%. The "third" party vote was practically eliminated.

The new executive was Governor Lon V. Stephens, of Boonville, Missouri. He was born and reared in Missouri, and had made a success as a banker and as state treasurer. During his administration the Federal soldiers home at St. James and the Confederate soldiers home at Higginsville were made state institutions, the state board of charities and corrections was organized, the state hospital at Farmington was established, the Missouri colony for the feeble-minded was founded at Marshall, the fruit experiment station was established at Mountain Grove, the first Missouri state fair was held at Sedalia, the



LON V. STEVENS



state historical society of Missouri was established at Columbia, and an appropriation for a World's Fair at St. Louis was authorized by the people. The Spanish-American war was fought at this time and Missouri met with loyalty the call of the Government for volunteers. The account of that war will be related under a "A Century of Military Missouri".

The campaign of 1900 was again waged on national issues. These issues grew out of the Spanish-American war, over which the State had no control. Missouri went Democratic and elected Alexander M.



A. M. DOCKERY

Dockery, of Daviess county, governor both by a majority and a plurality vote. Governor Dockery was a native Missourian. He had practiced medicine and later had become a successful banker. He was a successful business man and politician. From 1883 to 1899 he had served as congressman and had made a reputation for fairness, integrity, and ability. The State and the country were now prosperous. During this four year term the State created a factory

and industry inspection department, a board of mediation and arbitration, and provided for a high school inspector. These show that factory, labor, and educational matters were assuming more importance. The Louisiana Purchase Exposition, or World's Fair, was held in St. Louis in 1904 and did much to advertise Missouri and to broaden and deepen the pride of Missourians.

## SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. How did the growing power of the individual voter manifest itself in politics from 1870 to 1904?
2. With the growing political power of the voter what did the people demand from the government?
3. What is the third characteristic feature of this period?
4. What party which had its origin in Missouri afterwards became a national party?
5. Emphasise the five important features under Governor Hardin's administration.
6. What events had transpired in Missouri history to make the people feel the need of a new constitution in 1875?
7. Discuss some of the merits and some of the demerits of the constitution of 1875.
8. From the explanation in this text what do you consider one of the most important clauses in the constitution of 1875?
9. What conditions brought about a demand for more money and reform in the currency system during Governor Phelps' administration?
10. While Democratic governors were being elected in Missouri, yet the plurality by which they were elected leads you to what conclusion?
11. Beginning in 1888 you note what change in the Democratic party leaders?
12. Note what you consider as some of the most important legislation enacted under the new Democratic leaders from 1888 to 1896.

## CHAPTER V

### THE PERIOD OF INDEPENDENT VOTING AND POLITICAL UNCERTAINTY, 1904-1922

The two important features of this period from 1904 to 1922 are the independence of the individual voter and the doubtful political character of Missouri. These two features are closely related since independent voting causes political uncertainty. During this period Missouri elected five governors, three of whom were Democrats and two Republicans. Missouri voted for five presidents, and three times she cast her vote for a Republican and two times for a Democrat. This indicates a doubtful state politically. Again, Missouri in 1904 elected a Democratic governor, and a Republican lieutenant-governor, legislature, and State officers; in 1908, a Republican governor, lieutenant-governor, and House of Representatives, and a Democratic Senate and State Officers; in 1912, and in 1916, a Democratic governor, State officers, and legislature, except a Republican state auditor in 1916; in 1920, a Republican governor, state officers, and legislature; in 1906 and 1914, a Democratic state superintendent of schools, and in 1910 and 1918, a Republican state superintendent of schools. These facts indicate independent voting.

The campaign of 1904 found the Democratic party divided both in Missouri and in the nation. A conservative Eastern man, Alton B. Parker of New York, was the Democratic presidential candidate, and a new man, Joseph W. Folk of St. Louis, was the candidate for governor. For the first time since 1868 Missouri went Republican for president and for all state officers except that of governor. However, Governor Folk was elected by a majority of 5,000 and a plurality of 30,000. The Legislature elected a Republican United States senator, Major William Warner of Kansas City, to succeed Senator Cockrell. Senator Warner was a

Union veteran from Wisconsin. He was a forceful man, an able lawyer, a public servant of integrity, and an excellent speaker. He was greatly beloved by the old Union veterans. Governor Folk, who was a lawyer, was a native of Tennessee. He had received a fine education. On coming to Missouri, he settled in St. Louis, where he took an active part in Democratic politics. He was elected city attorney in 1900 on a reform platform. He vigorously prosecuted all bribe-takers in the city government, and soon made for himself a state and national reputation. He was elected governor on the record he had made.



JOSEPH W. FOLK

During Governor Folk's administration two state normals, now teachers' colleges, were established, one at Springfield and one at Maryville; a state sanatorium was established at Mt. Vernon; a state dairy commissioner, board of horticulture, and library commission, were created; and boards of examiners were provided for lawyers, dentists, and osteopaths. By a vote of the people the constitution was amended providing for the initiative and referendum now in force, and permitting a special road and bridge tax to be levied. In 1907 a primary law was passed under which candidates for office were selected at a primary election.

The campaign of 1908 was one vigorously waged between the two old parties. The Republican candidate was Herbert S. Hadley of Kansas City. He had been elected attorney-general of Missouri in 1904. While holding this office he had made a state and national reputation in his prosecution of trusts, especially the Standard Oil Company. His record elected him governor by a plurality of 16,000, but



HERBERT S. HADLEY

he did not receive a majority. Governor Hadley was a native of Kansas. He had received a fine education and was a lawyer of ability. He returned to the law office after his term expired but continued to wield a strong influence in Republican politics until his removal to Colorado. The Republican candidate for lieutenant governor was finally declared elected by a very small plurality, and the Republican presidential candidate, William H. Taft, carried Missouri over William J. Bryan

by 629 votes. The state officers elected were Democrats, the Senate was Democratic, but the House of Representatives was Republican. This bi-partisan character of the State government made it difficult to obtain important legislation.

Much of the legislation was regulative or inspectional in character. These departments, commissions, and boards were created: a game and fish department, a food and drug commissioner, a department for inspection of petroleum oils, a board of public accountancy, a board of examination of nurses, a hotel inspection department, and a board of pharmacy. A court of appeals, the third in the state, was established at Springfield; a state industrial home for negro girls was provided for by law: a state poultry experiment station was established at Mountain Grove: a birth and death registration law was passed; and a state capitol commission was created. The State capitol burned in 1911 and the people authorized the issuance of \$3,500,000.00 in bonds to build and furnish a new capitol.

During Governor Hadley's administration Senator Stone was re-elected by the Legislature in 1909 and another Democrat, James A. Reed of Kansas City, was elected by the Legislature to the United States Senate in 1911. Senator Reed was a native of Ohio. He had been reared and educated in Iowa where he became a lawyer. On moving to Kansas City he became influential in politics and served two terms as mayor. He was an able lawyer and a fine public speaker. He was re-elected by popular vote in 1916.

Toward the latter part of these four years an insurgent movement began in the national Republican party. The main issue was over the rules governing the national House of Representatives. Both the House and the Senate, as well as the presidency, were Republican. In the off-election of 1910 this issue and the tariff issue were before the country. The new House was Democratic and elected as speaker one of Missouri's congressmen, Champ Clark of Pike county. Champ Clark was a native of Kentucky. He was a lawyer, legislator, public speaker, and statesman. He had served long in Congress and was one of the most beloved men in our public life. He narrowly missed nomination to the presidency in 1912. He continued as speaker until 1919 when the house had again become Republican. He died in 1921, after a service of twenty-six years in Congress.

In 1912 the Republican party split. The old organization renominated President Taft. The new party, which took the name "Progressive Party", nominated former president Theodore Roosevelt. In Missouri the Republicans nominated J. C. McKinley for governor, the Progressives, Albert D. Norton, and the Democrats, Elliott W. Major. The Democratic candidate was elected by a plurality of 119,000, which was the next to the largest plurality ever received by a Missouri governor. He did not receive a majority. The total vote was 2 per cent less than in 1908, just as the total vote in 1904 when the Democrats were not strongly united



Your Friend,  
Champlin.

showed a decrease of 6 per cent. Governor Major had been elected attorney-general of Missouri in 1908 and, like Governor Hadley he was advanced to the office of governor. Governor Major was a native Misourian, having been born in Lincoln county. He had studied law under Champ Clark. He made his home in Bowling Green. He had a Democratic Legislature in both houses.



ELLIOTT W. MAJOR

The important laws passed during his term were, first, those providing State aid to small high schools and weak common schools, and second, an act creating the state public service commission to control rates and service of telephone, railroad, street railway, light, and gas companies. A state board of pardon and paroles, a state highway department, a land reclamation department, a commission for the blind, and a children's code commission, were established. In 1913 the Seventeenth amendment to the United States Constitution was adopted providing for the election of United States senators by direct vote of the people. The State began to take a new interest in better highways at this time. In 1916 the national government became involved in the Mexican Border War and the Missouri National Guard was the first to give service. The story of this will be told under "A Century of Military Missouri".

The campaign of 1916 found each party united. A general European War had been in progress for two years. The main issues of the campaign related to the attitude of the United States toward the European belligerents and to the Mexican border troubles. The Democratic candidate for governor was Frederick D. Gardner of St. Louis. The Re-



publican candidate was Judge Henry Lamm of Sedalia. The Democrats carried the State and the nation. Senator Reed was re-elected to the United States Senate and all except one of the state officers were Democrats. The Legislature was also Democratic. The total vote was large, being 12% over the 1912 election. The election itself was close. Governor



FREDERICK D. GARDNER

Gardner received a plurality of 2,000. Governor Gardner was a native of Kentucky. He settled in St. Louis and made a success in business. He became interested in the high interest rates charged farmers for money they borrowed and proposed a state farmer's land bank. This proposal combined with a well conducted campaign on the basis of a business man for governor, secured for Governor Gardner both his nomination and his election. He had never held any state office before 1916.

The first two years of Governor Gardner's administration were largely filled with war activities throughout the State. The remarkable record made by Missouri and Missourians in support of their country in the World War will be related under "A Century of Military Missouri". Legislative acts aside from war legislation provided for the creation of a state tax commission, a state prison board, abolition of the contract system in the penitentiary, a state-wide mother's pension law, and a local tax levy for county hospitals. X. P. Wilfley, of St. Louis, was appointed United States Senator in 1918 to fill temporarily the vacancy caused by the death of Senator Stone, who died on April 14, 1918. In the November election of that year Judge Selden P.

Spencer of St. Louis was elected to complete Senator Stone's term. Senator Spencer, who was a Republican, was a native of Pennsylvania. He had received a fine education and after coming to Missouri had held public office. He was re-elected to the United States Senate in 1920. The 1918 election gave the Republicans control of the House of Representatives in Missouri. They also elected the state superintendent of public schools.

During the latter part of Governor Gardner's term the Missouri presidential suffrage bill, giving Missouri women the right to vote, became a law on April 5, 1919. A few months later, the Federal suffrage amendment was approved by the Missouri Legislature. This ended a campaign for woman suffrage which had begun in Missouri fifty years before. Another important law which went into effect was the prohibition act. A national prohibition amendment to the United States constitution was adopted. Other state legislation created a department of beverage inspection, a soldiers' and sailors' compensation commission, enlarged the functions of the state board of health, and authorized counties to erect memorials to soldiers and sailors. A number of centennial celebrations were held in 1920 in commemoration of Missouri's century of statehood.

The campaign of 1920 was waged on the issues growing out of the world war. Some of these were political as the League of Nations, others were economic as the high prices, which reached the highest level since 1864. The war closed in November 1918 and a post war boom began in 1919 and continued until the fall of 1920. The people became extravagant, went heavily in debt, speculated, and all classes, except the salaried and income classes, shared in the high profits and incomes received. Land and property doubled in value. Fortunes were made in a few months only to be reinvested at a figure as high or higher than that received. Money was easy to make but instead of the people saving their profits,



GOVERNOR GARDNER SIGNING THE MISSOURI PRESIDENTIAL  
SUFFRAGE BILL, APRIL 5, 1919

many of them spent freely or tried to make more money. In fact it was the biggest boom the United States had ever had and it ended in being one of the most disastrous. Instead of these years being years of real prosperity, which can only be built on the sound foundations of thrift and work and saving, they were really years of discontent. The people complained of the high prices they paid, the high rents, high labor costs, and high clothing and food bills. By the fall of 1920 everything was getting ready for a great change. The banks were loaned to the limit, the interest rates were getting higher and higher, and wise men were beginning to fear a panic. The people did not realize these things, but they did realize that things were not well adjusted. If they had known what had taken place in Missouri and in the nation one hundred years before, they might have been more careful.

The election of 1920 resulted in a victory for the Republicans never equalled in the nation or in the State. Both houses of Congress and the presidency went Republican, and Missouri for the first time in fifty years elected a Republican Legislature in both houses. All the state offices were Republican and Governor Hyde of Trenton, the Republican candidate, was elected by a majority of 57,000 and a plurality of 141,000. Both were the largest ever cast in Missouri. The total vote was very large owing to the woman vote.

At this election a number of amendments to the constitution were adopted. One permitted Kansas City to frame a new charter, one permitted road districts to vote increased taxes for roads, and another authorized the state to issue \$60,000,000 of road bonds. An amendment was adopted authorizing pensions for the blind, and another authorized a bond issue of \$1,000,000 for creating a soldiers settlement fund. A "bone dry" enforcement prohibition act passed by the 1919 Legislature was approved on a referendum vote and

an initiative measure providing for a vote on holding a State constitutional convention carried.



ARTHUR M. HYDE

Governor Arthur M. Hyde was born in Mercer county, Missouri. He received a fine education and became a lawyer. He also engaged in business. He had never held a state elective office. During the first two years of his administration three sessions of the Legislature were held (one regular and two special), a state constitutional convention convened, and Missouri celebrated her centennial of admission into the Union. A county unit education law was passed, a number of acts relating to the children's code, a state finance consolidation law, a state budget law, a state agricultural consolidation department law, a county library law, and a Missouri road law providing for the expenditure of the \$60,000,000 road bonds. Some of these were held up by referendum petitions. In August 1921 the people at a special election authorized a convention to revise and amend the constitution, amended the constitution so as to enable women to hold any office in the State, amended the constitution so as to authorize the \$60,000,000 road bond issue to be paid from motor vehicle license fees, and authorized the Legislature to incur not exceeding \$15,000,000 indebtedness for bonuses to Missouri soldiers, sailors, and marines. The first special session of the Legislature in June and July, 1921 dealt with road legislation, the second special session in November, 1921 enacted a soldiers' and sailors' bonus law and provided for the issuance of the road bonds. The election of delegates to the new constitutional convention was held on Jan. 31, 1922 and the convention convened on May 25, 1922.

During August 1921 a statewide centennial celebration was held in Sedalia, in connection with the State Fair, under the direction of the Missouri Centennial Commission, which had been created by the Legislature. Many celebrations were held over the State, notably in Kansas City, St. Louis, St. Charles, and Springfield. These did much to instruct the people in the history of Missouri and to develop State pride. It is fitting that "A Century of Missouri Politics" and, in fact, "A Century of Missouri's Statehood" should so close. The founders of Missouri built well and their descendants have proven worthy of their work.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. What facts lead you to the conclusion that there has been independent voting in Missouri since 1904?
2. What do you understand when it is stated that Governor Folk was elected by a majority of 5,000 and a plurality of 30,000?
3. What national amendments affecting Missouri were passed during Major's administration and Gardner's administration?
4. Discuss the recent amendments to the constitution.

PART V

**A CENTURY OF MILITARY  
MISSOURI**

CHAPTER I

**EARLY WARS—BLACK HAWK, SEMINOLE, MORMON, HONEY,  
MEXICAN, AND KANSAS BORDER WARS**

During her century of statehood Missouri has played an important part in each of the four great wars and the Mexican Border Trouble waged by the national government. These were the Mexican War, 1846-1848, the Civil War or the war between the states, 1861-1865, the Spanish-American War, 1898, the Mexican Border Trouble, 1915-1917, and the World War, 1917-1918. Besides these wars, Missouri has taken part in other military operations as the Black Hawk War, Seminole War, Mormon War, Honey War, Mormon War, Kansas Border Wars, and Philippine Insurrection War.

**THE BLACK HAWK WAR, 1832**

The Black Hawk war began and ended in 1832. It was a war between the Sac, Fox, and Winnebago Indians on one side, and the militia of Illinois and Wisconsin and the United States government troops on the other side. By treaty with the United States these Indians had given up claim to their land in Illinois and the Sacs and Foxes had settled west of the Mississippi. The Winnebagoes need not concern us. However, under Black Hawk and the Prophet, their leaders, the Sacs and Foxes gave the white settlers in Illinois much trouble. They crossed to the east side of the Mississippi in 1831 and began plundering and killing. Missouri furnished

some of the United States soldiers who were sent from St. Louis to subdue them. One of her sons, Henry Dodge, who had moved to Wisconsin, was one of the military leaders. Although the fighting was in Illinois and Wisconsin, Missouri prepared to resist any possible Indian invasion by Black Hawk. General Richard Gentry was ordered by Governor Miller to raise 1,000 volunteers. Five companies were raised in Boone county and others in Callaway, Clay, Lincoln, Marion, Monroe, Montgomery, Pike, Ralls, Ray, and St. Charles. Under General Gentry the Missouri troops marched to what is now Clark county. Other troops covered the Grand river and the Chariton river country. Missouri was prepared to protect her citizens. However, the Indians were soon defeated in Illinois and Wisconsin, and Black Hawk was captured. This ended the war. Black Hawk died near the Des Moines river, in Iowa, in 1838.

#### THE SEMINOLE OR FLORIDA WAR, 1837

The Seminole or Florida war grew out of the refusal of the Seminole Indians in Florida to move west of the Mississippi. They had an able leader in their chief Osceola, who, beginning in 1835, successfully defied the United States government and army. In the fall of 1837 President Van Buren asked Senator Benton whether Missourians would go to the swamps of Florida to help defeat the Seminoles. Senator Benton answered, "The Missourians will go wherever their services are needed." On September 8, 1837, the secretary of war wrote Colonel Richard Gentry of Columbia to raise 600 volunteers. On October 6, 1837, just twenty-eight days later, Colonel Gentry's regiment left Columbia to do battle on the field of war hundreds of miles away. His force was composed of men from the counties of Boone, Callaway, Chariton, Howard, Jackson, Marion, and Ray. Other companies were raised, of which two were composed of Delaware and Osage Indians to serve as scouts and spies.



After a river and ocean voyage the men disenmarked in Florida on November 15th. They received orders to march



GENERAL RICHARD GENTRY

to Lake Okee-cho-bee, one hundred and thirty-five miles inland. On Christmas day the battle with the Indians began. The Missourians were forced to wade knee-deep in the swamps to approach the foe. Col. Gentry was mortally wounded and died that night. After the loss of their leader, the Missourians bravely continued the fight until the Indians were defeated. The loss in killed and wounded was one hundred and thirty-eight, most of whom were Missourians. "The Missourians will go wherever their services are needed." The survivors of Colonel Gentry's troops were returned to their homes early in 1838. Missouri had written a page of honor and glory in the history of the State and nation.

#### THE MORMON WAR, 1838-1839

Between 1823 and 1830 a new religious denomination arose in western New York. Its founder was called Joseph Smith and its followers were called Mormons. They grew rapidly and in 1831 began settling in Jackson county. Here they purchased land and a city was founded twelve miles west of Independence. Within two years the Mormons in Jackson county numbered 1,200, about one-third of the total population. Hostility between them and the other settlers

soon appeared. The pioneer settlers disliked the Mormons on account of their religion, their attitude against slavery, and their claims to ultimately possess the country. Hostility of feeling was followed by open hostility. The Mormons were molested, much of their property was destroyed, and finally in 1833 they were forced to leave Jackson county. They suffered much and they lost much. The inhabitants of Clay county hospitably gave them temporary shelter and work. But the same causes which drove them from Jackson county forced them to leave Clay county in 1836. The older settlers feared them and their rapid growth in numbers.

The Legislature created Caldwell county in 1836 and it was understood that the new county was to be the home of the Mormons. They emigrated there in 1836. New arrivals came from the eastern states and their population reached 15,000. As they increased, they expanded into Carroll and Daviess county. Clashes involving loss of life and property took place in these counties between the Mormons and the older settlers. The militia was called out, and State troops opposed the Mormon troops. Both sides were now determined. Finally in 1838 Governor Boggs issued an order to General Clark in which he stated that "the Mormons must be treated as enemies and must be exterminated or driven from the State if necessary for the public peace." State troops under General Lucas now began pouring into Caldwell county to capture Far West, the Mormons' principal city. The Mormons agreed to surrender their leaders and to leave the State. It was now winter. The sufferings and losses of the Mormons were heavy, but by April 23, 1839, all had left Caldwell county. They emigrated to Illinois and in about ten years they moved to Utah. The leaders who were surrendered either escaped or were freed. A division later occurred among the Mormons. The Reorganized Church of Latter Day Saints left Utah and today has its church headquarters in Independence, where it has a large number of adherents.

THE HONEY WAR OF  
THE IOWA-MISSOURI BOUNDARY DISPUTE, 1839-1840

The Iowa-Missouri Boundary dispute of 1840 has been popularly called "The Honey War". It was not an armed conflict but it involved military operations both by Iowa and Missouri. The dispute arose over a narrow strip of land claimed by each. A Missouri farmer in Clark county cut down three bee trees, filled with honey, on this strip. He escaped, but when the sheriff of Clark county tried to collect taxes on this strip from an Iowan, the sheriff was arrested, taken to Burlington, Iowa, where he was later released. The Missourians in Clark, Lewis, and Marion counties were aroused, and so were the people of Iowa. Governor Boggs sent 200 militiamen to Clark county and about 600 Missourians gathered on Fox river near Waterloo. The snow was deep, the weather cold, and the men had only a few blankets. On the Iowa side was camped the Iowa militia with 300 men. Governor Lucas of Iowa was with them. Before open conflict arose, better judgment prevailed and a movement started to have a commission appointed by Missouri and Iowa to make peaceable settlement. So ended "The Honey War", but the boundary dispute was not settled until the United States Supreme Court had decided on the legal boundary line and in 1851 had stone posts erected every ten miles.

THE MEXICAN WAR, 1846-1848

Th part taken by Missourians in the Mexican War was one of glory, honor, and lasting value to their State and country. Like all western people, they wanted to see the United Stafes expand, and as Missourians they were especially interested in New Mexico where was located Santa Fe, the western end of the Santa Fe trade and trail. They responded quickly to the nation's call for men and 7,000 saw

service. They endured hardships bravely and they battled victoriously against a foe superior in numbers. They crossed deserts and mountains, invaded a hostile country and fought Mexicans and Indians. By their victories they added New Mexico to the United States and also conquered two provinces in old Mexico. They gave New Mexico her first American military commander, her first American governor, and her first American code of laws.

The outbreak of war between Mexico and the United States in 1846 found Missourians ready to enlist in the proposed military expedition to Santa Fe. Governor Edwards called for volunteers in May and within a month 1358 Missourians had gathered at Fort Leavenworth. They represented the counties of Callaway, Clay, Cole, Franklin, Howard, Jackson, Lafayette, Platte, Saline, and St. Louis. The mounted volunteers numbering 856 elected Alexander W. Doniphan, of Clay county, as their colonel. The entire force including 300 United States dragoons was under the command of another citizen of Missouri, Colonel Stephen W. Kearney of the United States Army. The expedition followed the Santa Fe trail and after traveling 900 miles reached Santa Fe in August. A force of 7,000 Mexicans had planned to attack them in a mountain pass, but at the approach of the Americans the Mexicans fled.

After taking peaceable possession of Santa Fe, General Kearney by proclamation annexed New Mexico to the United States. He appointed Colonel Doniphan and Willard P. Hall, who were adopted Missourians, to draft a constitution and code of laws for the territory, and he appointed Charles Bent, another Missourian, as governor. General Kearney then departed with his 300 dragoons to San Diego in southern California, where he successfully aided the United States forces.

Shortly after General Kearney's departure, Colonel Sterling Price, another Missourian, arrived from Fort

Leavenworth with 1,200 Missouri volunteers from the counties of Boone, Benton, Carroll, Chariton, Linn, Livingston, Monroe, Randolph, Ste. Genevieve, and St. Louis. Colonel Doniphan now marched against the Navajos, a warlike tribe



COLONEL ALEXANDER W. DONIPHAN

of Indians who were giving trouble. Despite the mountainous country and the cold weather, the Missourians reached the Indian strongholds and a treaty of peace was made. After returning to Santa Fe, Colonel Doniphan with about 1,000 Missourians marched south toward Chihuahua, located south of the Rio Grande in old Mexico. The plan was to join the United States army here. The march was through deserts. The suffering of the men and their animals from thirst and cold was terrible. After crossing the Rio Grande, supplies were found. At Brazito, in old Mexico, a battle was fought on Christmas day, 1846, and the Mexicans were badly de-

feated. From Brazito Doniphan's expedition went to El Paso, Texas, where it was well received. From here the march was resumed to Chihuahua, 200 miles farther. Fifteen miles from Chihuahua a force of 4,000 Mexicans, well armed and supported by artillery, attacked the Missouriians in the mountain pass of Sacramento. Here the battle of Sacramento was



BATTLE OF SACRAMENTO. BY CARPENTER

fought and the Missouriians again were victorious. The Mexicans had prepared strings and handcuffs for the Missouriians. The Mexicans lost 200 killed and 300 wounded, the Missouriians lost one killed and eleven wounded. After reaching Chihuahua the march was resumed southeastward to Saltillo, 470 miles away. The city was captured and the expedition continued to the mouth of the Rio Grande river. Here the men took ship and reached their homes during the summer of 1847. Their land marches had extended 3,000 miles. They had successfully fought two pitched battles with the Mexicans, had defeated the Navajos, had conquered three large provinces, and had entered a score of towns and cities.

And all this they accomplished in the midst of a hostile population of hundreds of thousands of people, against a foe vastly larger in numbers, and with the loss of less than 50 men. It is interesting to note that seventy years later another Missourian, General John J. Pershing, led another expedition into old Mexico.

After Colonel Doniphan left Santa Fe, Colonel Price became the military commander. An insurrection arose among the natives and Governor Bent and many Missourians were killed. More reinforcements arrived from Missouri and the insurrection was suppressed. However, the total loss was large, 400 men dying in battle or from disease. In 1848 the war ended, and Mexico ceded New Mexico and California to the United States. The United States armies had obtained successes everywhere and not the least of these were the capture of New Mexico and Doniphan's Expedition, to which Missouri had contributed 7,000 men.

#### THE KANSAS BORDER TROUBLES, 1855-1860

The passage of the Kansas-Nebraska act in 1854 found Missouri determined to make Kansas a slave territory and New England determined to make Kansas a free territory. Missourians organized in Blue Lodges and the New Englanders in Northern Emigrant Aid Societies. Both sent settlers and both sent merely voters. The proslavery Missourians settled or voted in such proslavery towns as Atchison, Kickapoo, Lecompton, and Leavenworth in northeastern Kansas; the free soil men settled or voted in Hampden, Lawrence, Manhattan, Ossawotamie, Topeka, and Wabaunsee lying west of Kansas City. Although threats were made by both sides, conditions were generally peaceable until after the proslavery was the legal government, and the free soil people in the same year had formed an antislavery government in opposition. The proslavery government called to Missourians to come to its aid. From 1855 to 1857 Missourians responded.

Under General Atchison of Missouri 1,000 Missourians set out to attack Lawrence in 1855. By agreement with the governor of Kansas the attack was not made. In May 1856 the Missourians returned and destroyed much property in Lawrence. Three men were killed. John Brown of Ossawatimie retaliated by murdering five unarmed proslavery settlers in Kansas. This aroused both Kansas and Missouri. In August 1856 the Missourians invaded Kansas and destroyed Ossawatimie. The antislavery Kansans now planned to destroy Lecompton. About 3,000 Missourians met on the border and considered a destructive invasion of Kansas. This was prevented by the intervention of the United States troops. In 1857 Kansas elected an antislavery government. This ended the invasion of Kansas by Missourians.

Under the leadership of John Brown and others, the Kansans began to invade Missouri in 1857 and continued to destroy, rob, and murder until 1860. Their worst deeds were committed in Cass, Bates, Vernon, and Barton counties. The invaders were called "Jayhawkers". People soon feared for their lives and property. Some left the country. Slaves were stolen and houses were burned. The people organized to resist the bands but conditions became so bad that Governor Stewart called out the militia in 1858. The governor of Kansas aided and temporary peace was restored. Trouble soon broke out again and in 1859 the Missouri Legislature voted \$30,000 to enable Governor Stewart to protect the border. Things quieted down until November, 1860, when James Montgomery invaded Missouri. Again Governor Stewart sent troops and order was restored.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. Name the wars in which Missouri has taken a part.
2. Give the main facts in the Black Hawk war.
3. Discuss the Seminole war as to cause, the leaders, and the results.



4. Describe the immigration of the Mormons into Missouri.
5. What was the objection urged against the Mormons?
6. State the cause of the Honey war.
7. Why was Missouri interested in the Mexican war?
8. What was Missouri's response to the national call for soldiers?
9. Describe Doniphan's expedition.
10. What was the cause of the Kansas Border troubles?

## CHAPTER II

### THE CIVIL WAR, 1861-1865

#### THE MILITARY STRUGGLE FOR MISSOURI

The Civil War in Missouri can be easily understood if four main points are kept in mind. In the first place the possession of Missouri by the North was almost necessary if the Federal Government hoped to defeat the Confederacy. Missouri's central geographical position made her the connecting trade and transportation route between the East and the West and between free soil Illinois and free soil Kansas. With both Missouri was joined by the Missouri river and by the Hannibal and St. Joseph railroad. Missouri could also furnish wealth and men, for she was one of the leading states in both. In St. Louis she possessed the largest city in the Mississippi valley and one of the strongest in pro-Union sentiment, especially among the Germans. On the other hand, the possession of Missouri was not essential to the Confederacy, and the Confederacy did not make serious and determined effort to possess or retain Missouri. In fact even after the Missouri State Government had seceded and sent representatives to Richmond, Va., the Confederate Government did not know what to do with Missouri. The efforts in Missouri for the Confederacy were made by Missourians.

In the second place, Missouri was geographically tied to the North. On three sides she was surrounded by free soil. This made it easier for the Union forces to possess and retain her. This made it harder for the Confederate forces to battle for her. The North could and did pour in troops from Illinois, Iowa, and Kansas; the South could come in only from Arkansas and to reach the rich counties in Central Missouri must travel on foot or horse 200 miles. The Union forces could travel east or west by railroad from Hannibal to

St. Joseph or by river from St. Louis to Kansas City. Both the railroad and the river were soon in Union hands. Missouri as a state was geographically tied to the North and northern Missouri was geographically part of the North.

In the third place, the United States Government had practically every advantage in Missouri over the old State Government and the Confederacy. It had a pro-Union State Convention and government with adequate protection and with adequate powers. It had at least 50%, perhaps more, of the people supporting it. It had better organization, position, and transportation. It had more soldiers, better trained, better equipped, and better fed. It had its territory consolidated instead of being divided. By holding both banks of the Missouri river it kept the Confederates in north and south Missouri from combining. And, of highest importance, it had vastly greater resources in wealth and in money.

Finally, Missourians themselves were divided. When peace failed in the spring of 1861 some joined with the South and others with the North. This division was not only by sections and by counties, but even by communities and families. This resulted in the worst kind of warfare—neighbor against neighbor. This led to injustice, murder, plunder, bushwhacking, and general guerilla fighting.

#### THE MILITARY STRUGGLE FOR MISSOURI JUNE 12, 1861-MARCH 8, 1862

The open military fight for Missouri began with the break between General Lyon and Governor Jackson at the Planter's Hotel conference in St. Louis on June 12, 1861. The seizure of the United States arsenal at Liberty, the capture of Camp Jackson, and the passage of the State military bill, had preceded this, but formal and open-warfare was not accepted until June 12th. From that day both Lyon and the Federal Government, and Jackson, Price, and the State Government, waged active warfare. This military struggle lasted nine

months and had two periods. The first period ended on August 10, 1861, when the Confederate and Missouri troops were victorious at the battle of Wilson's Creek. The second



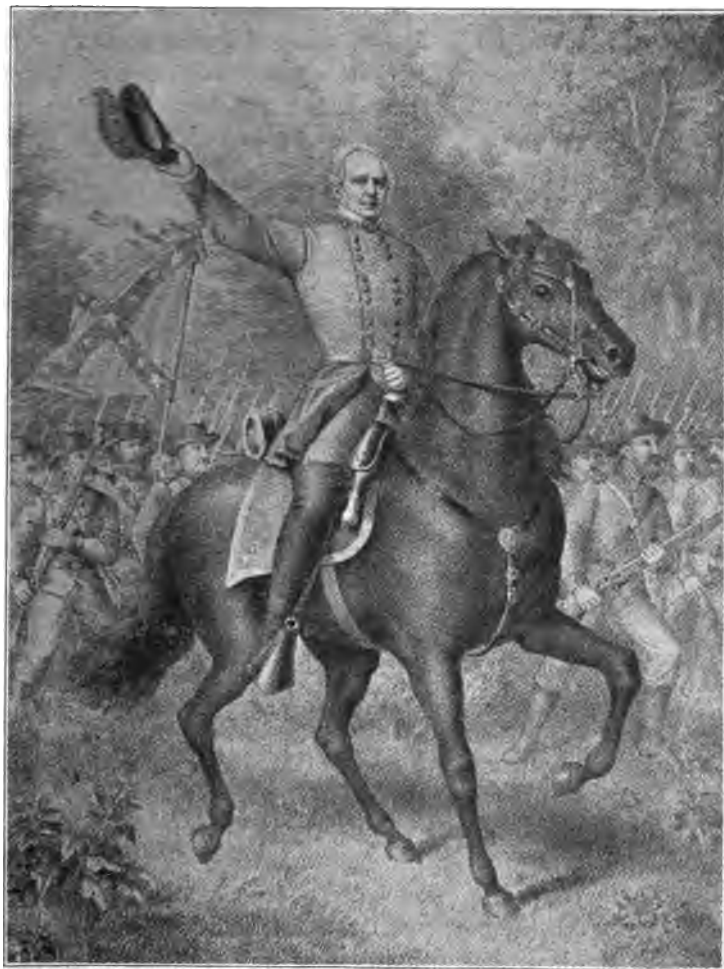
GENERAL LYON AND GENERAL BLAIR STARTING FOR  
CAMP JACKSON. BY BINGHAM

period ended on March 8, 1862, when the Union troops were victorious at the battle of Pea Ridge. The last battle settled the military fate of Missouri. The State was to remain in the Union both from a political and from a military standpoint.

General Lyon's military plan was sound and simple, and if he had been supported by his superiors in command, the military struggle for Missouri would have ended on August 10, 1861. This plan was to send trained Union troops to southwest Missouri to cut off General Price and the State troops in their retreat before Lyon's army. General Lyon was to take his army up the Missouri river to central Missouri, get possession of the Missouri river, keep the pro-southern men in north Missouri from enlisting in Price's army, and defeat General Price before he had time to raise and train his soldiers. The Union troops in southwest Missouri were to cut off Price's army as it retreated toward Arkansas.

General Price's and Governor Jackson's military plan was first to get men and second to get time to train and equip them. They also hoped to keep possession of a point or two along the Missouri river, at which recruits from north Missouri could pass over. This plan was successful in obtaining men, but owing to Lyon's activity with his trained soldiers the last part of the plan could not be carried out.

Governor Jackson left St. Louis on June 12th. He caused the bridges to be destroyed along the way. On reaching Jefferson City he issued a call for 50,000 men. General Price was the commander-in-chief of the State troops. Lyon with 1,500 men followed at once. The State Government left for Boonville where the State troops were gathered under Colonel Marmaduke. Here the battle of Boonville was fought on June 17th. Lyon with his larger force was successful. The State troops were scattered and Governor Jackson with a small body of men retreated to Warsaw, Benton county. The defeat of the State troops at Boonville was important. It greatly discouraged the prosouthern men. Again, it gave the Union troops possession of all north Missouri and of the Missouri river itself. Finally, it forced Governor Jackson and the State Government to flee, and together with ad-



GENERAL STERLING PRICE

vancing Union troops from the west it made General Price and his army at Lexington retreat immediately.

Lyon could not follow at once owing to securing wagons and supplies, and later he was delayed by high water. In the meantime Governor Jackson and his troops had moved to Lamar, Barton county, where they were joined by General Rains with more State troops. Part of the Union troops at Springfield, which had been sent there by Lyon, were now ordered under Sigel to Carthage to cut off Price. But Price had already passed and gone to join General McCulloch with his Arkansas Confederates. Sigel now tried to hold Jackson until Lyon could arrive. The battle of Carthage ensued on July 5th between 1,000 Union troops and 4,000 State troops. Jackson was victorious and Sigel and his men barely escaped back to Springfield.

Price now trained his men at Cowskin Prairie in southwest Missouri and gathered supplies and equipment. Lyon arrived in Springfield on July 13th. He had 6,000 men under him but the term of enlistment of 3,000 would expire in August. Lyon telegraphed for more men so as to attack Price immediately. No reinforcements arrived. Price was now growing stronger in every way. Lyon determined to risk battle rather than see lost all that he had gained.

On August 10th, the opposing armies met in the bloody battle of Wilson's Creek, ten miles southwest of Springfield. Lyon had 5,400 men and Price and McCulloch 11,000 armed and 2,000 unarmed men. McCulloch was in command of the the joint Missouri and Arkansas troops. General Lyon was killed and twenty-four per cent of the men under him were killed. Of the State troops and Confederates, 1,242 were killed, wounded, or missing. McCulloch and Price were victorious. If McCulloch had followed the advice and entreaty of Price in pursuing the Union troops, the latter might have been captured together with their vast stores of equipment and ammunition which were badly needed by the Confeder-

ates. But McCulloch declined, stating that he was to protect Arkansas and that Missouri had not joined the Confederacy. The Union troops retreated to Rolla, leaving Price in control of all southwest Missouri. However, a greater loss to the Union was the death of General Lyon. He had arrived in



BATTLE OF WILSON'S CREEK. BY WYETH

St. Louis on February 6, 1861, and he died at Wilson's Creek on August 10, 1861. During these six months and four days he had worked fast and hard, had planned carefully and daringly, and had fought bravely and courageously. He together with Blair did more to keep Missouri in the Union than any other two men. Colonel Sneed, Price's chief of staff at Wilson's Creek, said this of Lyon: "Lyon had not fought and died in vain. By wisely planning, by boldly doing, and by bravely dying, he had won the fight for Missouri."

Price now marched to Lexington where he found Colonel Mulligan with 3,000 Union men. Price's army grew



larger and increased to 15,000 men, of whom one-half were armed. He besieged Mulligan and, from September 18th to the 21st, the battle of Lexington was fought. The Union troops fought behind entrenchments and Price's men attacked behind hemp bales, which were moved forward. Mulligan was forced to surrender. The losses were slight on both sides. If Price could have kept Lexington, the effect of this battle would have been important. Men now began enlisting under him in large numbers. They came from north and south of the Missouri river. But, Union troops were also advancing from the north, the east, and the west, and 20,000 had been sent to Springfield. On September 30th, Price was again marching for southwest Missouri. There he was safe from possible capture and he was also able to protect the secession State Legislature, which met at Neosho on October 21st.

General Fremont, who was now in charge of the Union troops in Missouri, collected 40,000 men at Springfield. He planned to defeat Price, overrun Arkansas, and capture New Orleans. This was the same General Fremont who had failed to send Lyon a man at Wilson's Creek and had failed to help Mulligan at Lexington. Before he had time to begin his campaign, Fremont was removed. His successor, General Hunter, ordered the Union troops to withdraw to Rolla and Sedalia on November 2nd. Southwest Missouri was again in control of Price and remained so for three months. The old State Government, or rather what was left of it, had now joined the Confederacy. But this meant little if Missouri was controlled by Union armies. Price had to defeat these armies to make secession effective. His army had greatly increased by recent enlistments and was in good condition. The Federal authorities also must wage battle to defeat Price. This condition made battle necessary for both sides.

By the middle of February, 1862, General Curtis with his Union troops moved on to Springfield. Price retreated

into northwestern Arkansas. He joined forces with McCulloch and Van Horn. General Van Horn took command. He had under him 25,000 men, of whom 5,000 were Indians. Curtis had 10,500. At Pea Ridge, Arkansas, just below the south Missouri boundary line, the two armies met in a three days battle. Curtis was victorious and the Confederates were forced to retreat. The Union loss was 1,351 men, the Confederate loss was probably greater and included the death of General McCulloch. The military struggle for Missouri had ended in a Union victory. Missouri now was clear of regular Confederate armies. Price and 5,000 of his men were transferred east of the Mississippi to aid the Confederacy. The hope of the Confederates in keeping Missouri was now abandoned and not until 1864 was a Confederate army of size again in the State. The battle of Pea Ridge determined the military fate of Missouri.

#### FEDERAL MILITARY ORDERS AND CONFEDERATE RECRUITING, 1861-1862

After the battle of Pea Ridge about 5,000 of Price's men followed him east of the Mississippi to aid the large Confederate armies. This number soon increased to 8,000. They were organized as the First and Second Missouri Brigades. They fought throughout the war and at its close there were only 800 left. Such was the record made by Missourians.

Many of the old soldiers under Price returned to Missouri after the battle of Pea Ridge. They came back to recruit men for the Confederate armies. They found many of the citizens discontented and willing to enlist. The causes of this discontent were the Federal, or Union, military orders. In October, 1861, the State Convention had adopted a military bill which established a Missouri State Militia. This was composed of the pro-Union supporters, and companies were in nearly every county. In the spring of 1862 this

Missouri State Militia passed under the control of the Union commander of Missouri, General Schofield. The Southern sympathizers in Missouri were harassed by their Union neighbors and they thought that soon they might be drafted to fight for the Union against the South. So when the returning Confederate soldiers of Price began to recruit in 1862, many Missourians joined them. The Union troops determined to break up these recruiting bands and to prevent them from going south.

The Confederate recruiting leader in northeast Missouri was Colonel Joseph C. Porter, of Lewis county. Most of his men were unarmed and his camp in Lewis county was broken up in July, 1862. Followed by the Union troops he and 2,000 of his men, of whom only 500 were armed, were overtaken at Kirksville by Colonel John H. McNeil. Here the battle of Kirksville was fought on August 6, 1862, and Porter was badly defeated. This practically ended Confederate recruiting in northeast Missouri, although Confederate recruits continued to slip through the Federal line on the Missouri river.

Confederate recruiting had also begun in central and western Missouri south of the river. A force of these recruits under Colonel Upton Hayes gathered at Lee's Summit, in Jackson county, and they were reinforced by Clinton county recruits, under Colonel Hughes, and by the guerillas under Quantrell. They attacked the Federal force under Colonel James T. Buel at Independence on August 11, 1862, and captured it. Five days later they attacked Major Foster and his Union troops at Lone Jack. The battle of Lone Jack was bitterly fought and neither side was entirely victorious. However, owing to approaching Union troops the Confederates were forced to retreat and were soon out of the state. Although the organized and open recruiting of the Confederates was a failure due to the Union troops, small bands were able to get through the lines and reach the Confederate armies.

## BORDER WARFARE, 1861-1863

The opening of the war in Missouri in 1861 was immediately followed by renewal of war on the Kansas-Missouri border. "Jim" Lane and his Kansas Freebooters soon invaded Missouri. When General Price marched north to Lexington in 1861, he had chased Lane out of the State; but while he was at Lexington, Lane and his men returned and on September 23, 1861, they looted and burned Osceola, Missouri, and killed a score of people. Later they plundered Butler in Bates county and Parkville in Platte county. Soon the Kansas "Red Legs", so called from their red morocco leggins, under such leaders as Lane and Jennison became a terror to all western Missouri. No man's life or property was safe.

In retaliation for these outrages, Quantrell, the most daring of Missouri guerrillas, on August 21, 1863, led a force of 250 men from Jackson county to Lawrence, Kansas, the home of Lane. The town was burned, the stores and banks were looted, and 183 persons were killed. Lane managed to escape. But the sacking of Lawrence brought revenge.

Four days later General Thomas Ewing of the Kansas troops issued from Kansas City his notorious "Order No. 11". It commanded all persons in Jackson, Cass, Bates, and a part of Vernon county, except those living in or near the principal towns, to leave their homes within fifteen days. Loyal persons were permitted to move to military stations or to Kansas. The order was severely executed. Hundreds were forced from their homes, property was destroyed and plundered, and in Cass county only 600 of the 10,000 inhabitants were permitted to remain. Bands of robbers, bushwhackers, and soldiers roamed over the blighted district until the war closed and when the people came back in 1866 they frequently found nothing except their land.

General Ewing was strongly denounced for this cruel order. On his staff was Colonel Bingham, a Missourian. Bingham was an artist of ability. He painted a picture, "Order No. 11", which depicted the sufferings of the people. This painting is known throughout Missouri.



ORDER NUMBER ELEVEN. BY BINGHAM

Other retaliations were practiced. Among these was the Palmyra Massacre on August 18, 1862, by the Union troops and the Centralia Massacre of September 27, 1864 by Bill Anderson and his men. The war in Missouri had become one of cruel practices and bitter hatreds.

#### PRICE'S RAID, 1864

During 1863 the Missouri Confederate military leaders made a number of small raids in Missouri. Such men as Marmaduke, Shelby, Poindexter, and Jeff Thompson led

these raids. The principal object was to obtain recruits. The most famous raid was that of General Price in 1864.

General Price had been transferred to Arkansas and had successfully equipped a force of 12,000 men. He planned to enter Missouri when most of the Union troops were in the South, capture St. Louis if possible and at least Jefferson City, set up the old State Government, have recruits flock to his army, and perhaps wage a successful struggle for Missouri. He entered southeast Missouri on September 20, 1864. Half way to St. Louis he was opposed by Union troops under General H. S. Ewing. Although victorious, Price marched to Franklin county and then to Jefferson City. Federal troops were now pouring into Jefferson City from all parts of Missouri. Price passed around the city on October 8th. On his route westward he destroyed much railroad property. In this he was aided by Quantrell, Anderson, and other guerrillas. A small force was sent across the Missouri river and captured Glasgow. But Price continued westward. Volunteers did not enlist in large numbers. At Independence Price found himself pursued by one Union army under General Pleasanton and opposed by another under General Curtis. Along Big Blue river and Brush Creek, lying midway between Independence and Kansas City, the three days battle of Westport was fought. It was one of the most bitterly fought battles of the war, and in proportion to the number of men engaged it was one of the most fatal. Price was forced to retreat to Arkansas. The raid had been a failure. Instead of 23,000 recruits, which he had expected, only 6,000 were enrolled. His losses equalled this number.

The war was over in Missouri, but bushwhacking continued until 1865. Missouri contributed 110,000 men to the Union service and perhaps 30,000 to 40,000 men to the Confederate service, out of a possible 236,00 men of military age. In short, 65 per cent of Missourians of military age in 1860 had entered military service. This is a very high record.

Although no battles of first rank were fought in Missouri, there were 1,162 battles, engagements, and skirmishes in Missouri from 1861 to 1865. This is 11 per cent of the total combats of the Civil war and more than occurred in any state excepting Virginia and Tennessee. Although Missouri ranked only eight in population in 1860, still in the number of men she furnished the Union army alone she ranked seventh. In addition she supplied between 30,000 and 40,000 men to the Confederate cause. Certainly Missouri bore her share, and more, in the war between the states.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. State the four reasons why the possession of Missouri by the North was necessary if the Federal government hoped to defeat the Confederacy.
2. When was the open military fight for Missouri begun?
3. State General Lyon's military plan. State General Price's and Governor Jackson's military plan.
4. Describe the important battle in which these opposing armies met.
5. Discuss the battle of Lexington.
6. Why was the battle of Pea Ridge a decisive factor in the military fate of Missouri?
7. What was the great incentive for Confederate recruiting in Missouri?
8. What were the events which led up to the issue of "Order No. 11?" What was "Order No. 11?"
9. What was the purpose of Price's raid in 1864?
10. What is Missouri's record in her contribution of service men in the Civil war?
11. How does Missouri rank in number of battles and engagements fought in the State?

### CHAPTER III

## THE SPANISH AMERICAN WAR, 1898, AND THE MEXICAN BORDER TROUBLE 1915-1917

The opening of war with Spain on April 21, 1898, was followed two days later by President McKinley's call for 125,000 volunteers. Missouri's quota was one light battery and five regiments of infantry. The National Guard of Missouri at once responded and assembled at Jefferson Barracks, near St. Louis, to be mustered into service. Light Battery A, recruited in St. Louis under Captain Frank M. Rumbold, was the first to be mustered in on May 1st and after two months of training at Chickamauga landed in Porto Rico. It served here one month and after the close of the war was mustered out in November. The five regiments of Missouri volunteer infantry were all mustered in during May and were trained at various camps over the United States. Owing to the early close of the war, none of these saw service in Cuba or Porto Rico but all were waiting opportunity to serve their country. These five infantry regiments represented every part of Missouri. The First Regiment of Missouri Volunteer Infantry, under Colonel Edwin Batdorf, was recruited in St. Louis. The second, under Colonel William E. Caffee, was recruited in Butler, Clinton, Jefferson City, Joplin, Lamar, Nevada, Peirce City, Sedalia, and Springfield. The third, under Colonel George P. Gross, was recruited in Kansas City and Independence. The fourth, under Colonel Joseph A. Corby, was recruited in St. Joseph, Bethany, Carrollton, Chillicothe, Fulton, Hannibal, Jefferson Barracks, Maryville, Mound City, and Warrensburg. The fifth, under Colonel Milton Moore, was recruited in Kansas City, Carthage, Columbia, Excelsior Springs, Harrisonville, Higginsville, Jefferson Barracks, and Mexico.

When the President made his second call for 75,000 volunteers on May 25, 1898, Missouri immediately responded



and raised the Sixth Regiment Missouri Volunteer Infantry. This was the last regiment mustered into service but it saw more service than any other. The sixth, under Colonel Fletcher Hardeman, was recruited in Bloomfield, Brookfield, California, Carondelet, De Soto, Doniphan, Kennett, Lutesville, St. Louis, and Willow Springs. It became part of General Lee's army, went to Cuba, and took part in the occupation of Havana. It was highly trained and was called the best regiment in Lee's army. Part of the Third Regiment of United States Volunteer Engineers was also composed of Missourians which saw service in Cuba. The man who was first to plant the American flag on Cuban soil during the war was a Missourian, Arthur Lee Willard of Kirksville.

Missouri furnished a total of 8,109 soldiers in this war and in no instance was any of the men or officers of Missouri troops reported for infraction of military discipline. Missouri can take pride in her quick response to the Nation's call for men, in the record made by her men, and in the support given by her citizens. Missouri's greatest gain from the war, aside from the objects for which it was waged, was the cementing of the ties of friendship and loyalty between her citizens of Northern and Southern sympathy. The sons of Union soldiers and the sons of Confederate soldiers alike enlisted and marched shoulder to shoulder in support of their country.

Following the close of the Spanish-American war, the United States forces in the newly acquired Philippine Islands were faced with an organized insurrection of the natives in 1899. The insurrection was put down in 1900 but fighting between the United States troops and some of the savage natives, like the Moros, continued for years. There were Missourians in the United States army who took an active part in these struggles, and both privates and officers cast credit on their state. One of the privates, Ferdinando Keithley, of Barry county, while on picket duty saved an entire

camp from massacre by bravely repelling an attacking party of twenty Moros one night. He received eleven spear wounds in his body but he held off the Moros and then crawled one mile to camp to warn his comrades. He died the next morning. One of the Missouri officers was Lieutenant John J. Pershing, of Linn county. He had fought Indians on the plains and Spaniards in Cuba. He served in the Philippines almost continuously from 1899 to 1914. He made a remarkable record, conquered the Moros, and gave the natives a just administration. It was due to this record that he was later called upon to serve his country in the Mexican Border Trouble of 1915 and 1917, and later in the World War of 1917 and 1918.

#### THE MEXICAN BORDER TROUBLE, 1915-1917

When the raids of Mexican bandits and the destruction of American lives and property early in 1915 made it necessary for the United States Government to act, General Pershing was placed in command of the El Paso, Texas, district. Here he patrolled the boundary line until March, 1916, when he was ordered to lead an expedition of 10,000 men into Mexico in pursuit of Villa, the Mexican bandit leader. With his 10,000 United States cavalrymen he dashed across the line and for eleven months lived in a foreign country. He was 400 miles from his base of supplies, surrounded by deserts and mountains, bandits and hostile people. He did not make war on Mexico for strangely enough that country was neither at peace nor at war with the United States. General Pershing did not capture Villa but he did conduct his expedition, called the Punitive Expedition, in a way that reflected credit to America.

However, Missouri did more than furnish the commander. She furnished men, 5,030 in number, in the Mexican Border Trouble. On June 3, 1916, the National Defense Act was passed by Congress which federalized the National

Guards of all the states. Missouri was the first state to comply with that act. On June 18, 1916, the call of the President for the Missouri National Guard was issued. Two days later the Missouri soldiers began assembling at the State Rifle Range at Nevada. They were the first to mobilize. On July 1st they began leaving for Laredo, Texas, and soon all reached the Border. The number furnished by Missouri was 5,030 officers and men. For six months they patrolled 145 miles of the border. Due to the care taken of the men, there was little sickness and no camp diseases. The men were under the general command of Brigadier-General Harvey C. Clark, of Nevada. Most of the force was mustered out on December 30, 1916, but some were in service until shortly before war was declared against Germany.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. What was Missouri's quota in the Spanish-American war?
2. State the facts concerning the regiment which saw the most service.
3. Describe the services of Ferdinando Keithley.
4. In what way did Missouri contribute to the Mexican Border trouble?

## CHAPTER IV

### THE WORLD WAR, 1917-1918

The history of America's participation in the World War against the German Empire and its allies from April 6, 1917, to November 11, 1918, is one of highest credit to the patriotism of our citizens and to the courage of our soldiers. The entire United States was placed on a war basis in producing and conserving food, in making war supplies, and in selecting soldiers. In all of these activities Missouri and Missourians did their share and in several instances they did more than was required or was expected of them. This war record of Missouri falls into four divisions: first, the military record of Missouri soldiers; second, the war record of the army of citizens at home; third, the record of native Missourians who were prominent leaders in the nation during the war; and fourth, the gratitude of the State of Missouri, as expressed after the war, for the Missouri soldiers who were inducted into service. The individual records of Missouri soldiers in training camp and on battle field would fill volumes. Their bearing of hardships and privations, their exhibition of bravery and courage, proved that they were worthy sons of their patriotic ancestors.

#### MILITARY RECORD OF MISSOURI SOLDIERS

Missouri furnished a total of 156,232 officers and men in the World war. Of this total, 14,756 were Missouri national guardsmen, 92,843 were Missouri selective service men, 30,780 were volunteers in the regular army, 14,132 were enlisted men in the navy, and 3,721 were enlisted men in the marine corps. In short, according to the report of the adjutant general of Missouri, our State contributed 138,379 men to the army, 14,132 men to the navy, and 3,721 to the marine

corps,—a total of 156,232. It will be impossible to consider here the large number of volunteer enlistments from Missouri in the different branches of the United States military and naval service, since they were widely scattered among various organizations over the nation. Mention should be made of the 12th Engineers of St. Louis, composed of railway employees, which was sent to France on July 28, 1917, was the first regiment in France to receive the six months service stripes, and performed a great service in aiding in the construction of army transportation routes in France for the American Expeditionary Force and for later arrivals. Excepting the 12th Engineers and the various volunteers, ambulance and medical organizations, the first large division of Missouri soldiers to be inducted into service was the Missouri national guard.

The Missouri national guard has always made a fine record for its training and patriotism. In the Spanish American war it quickly and patriotically offered its service. In the Mexican Border trouble it gave excellent service to the government. When war was declared against the German Empire on April 6, 1917, its full war strength of 14,656 officers and men were inducted into national service. After training at Camp Clark, Nevada, Mo., it was sent to Camp Doniphan, Okla., on Sept. 28, 1917. The 1st Missouri Field Signal Battalion, of Kansas City, under Major Ruby D. Garrett, was detached and sent to France as part of the famous 42nd (Rainbow) Division, which was composed of national guard units of twenty-six states. In France this division saw early service and the Missouri battalion made an enviable record.

The rest of the Missouri national guard was consolidated with the Kansas national guard to form the 35th Division. Missouri furnished two-thirds and Kansas one-third of the men. The 35th Division began leaving for France in April 1918. It saw active service in the Vosges mountains, the St.

Mihiel sector, and the great Meuse-Argonne offensive. It made a remarkable record for bravery and effective fighting. It was given one of the most dangerous and important parts of the battle line and it successfully performed its work. Its casualties were very heavy, including 1,530 killed and 6,389 wounded. Its members were awarded two Congressional Medals of Honor and 85 Distinguished Service Crosses. It was discharged from service during the spring of 1919.

Speaking of this division in its remarkable fighting record along the Meuse-Argonne front, Frederick Palmer, the official war correspondent, said:

"In an advance of over seven miles the 35th had suffered 7909 casualties. Nearly half of its infantry was dead on the field or in the hospital. The other half was in a coma from fatigue. Every rod gained had been won by fighting against fire as baffling as it was powerful. To say that the 35th fought five days as a division is hardly doing it justice. A division may be said to be fighting when only one brigade is in line while the other is resting. All the men of the 35th were fighting. There were soldiers who did not have five hours sleep in that period of unbroken battle strain in the midst of the dead and dying. Only the powerful physique of the men, with their store of reserve energy which they drew on to the last fraction, enabled them to bear it as long as they did. Their courage and endurance and dash performed a mighty service in a most critical sector."

The first Missouri selective service men were sent to Camp Funston, Kansas. Here they were organized as part of the 89th Division in September, 1917, and were trained under General Leonard Wood. After eight months of training the division was sent to France. It was in active service in the St. Mihiel advance and in the Meuse-Argonne offensive. No division made a finer record. Its casualties were 1,760 killed and 5,838 wounded. Its members received nine Congressional Medals of Honor and 138 Distinguished Service Crosses. It was discharged in May 1919, after having

served as part of the Army of Occupation in Germany. The 89th Division has been called the "Fighting 89th". It and the "Brave 35th" showed the nation that the men of the Middle West are brave, fearless, and efficient.

The loss of Missourians in the World war, including casualties in camps at home, and on the battlefields of France, was 3,644 killed and 6,944 wounded—a total of 10,588, according to the report of the adjutant general of Missouri. Missouri troops bore over 3% of the total battle deaths and wounded of the American forces. Of battle deaths, excluding wounded, the Missouri boys suffered 3.4% of America's sacrifice on the battlefield. Five of the seventy-eight Congressional Medals of Honor were awarded Missourians and one hundred sixty-five Distinguished Service Crosses were also awarded Missourians. The first American to give his life in his country's service in France was a Kansas City volunteer, Dr. William T. Fitzsimmons. The first recruiting station for seamen for the United States navy to fill its quota in 1917 was Kansas City, Missouri. In 1917 Missouri furnished more marines than any other district. The second ambulance corps to land in France was from St. Louis. In fact, Missouri did her part, and more, in every way in furnishing able, loyal, and patriotic soldiers and seamen.

#### THE ARMY OF MISSOURIANS AT HOME

Just as Missouri boys in camp and on battlefield upheld the high traditions of their State, so did the army of citizens at home do their part in organizing their forces to produce food, make war materials, economize in consumption, buy liberty bonds, contribute to the Red Cross, Y. M. C. A., K. of C., and Camp Library movements, and in a hundred ways show their ability, thrift, and patriotism. This army of Missourians at home made sacrifices and showed courage that did much to make possible the victory of American arms.

War means men first, but it also means food, clothing, transportation, supplies, money, and a thousand things in order to be successful. Missouri supplied her share of men; she also furnished her share of money and materials.

Missouri's war governor was Frederick D. Gardner. He was awake to the situation which confronted the State and Nation when war was declared on April 6, 1917. Three days later he issued the first state war proclamation calling a statewide food conference in St. Louis, the first of its kind in the United States. On April 24th the Missouri Council of Defence was organized under the direction of F. B. Mumford, dean of the agricultural college of the University of Missouri. This council was in existence twenty-one months and during this time it was, in the words of Governor Gardner, "The supreme authority of the Commonwealth in relation to the State's duty to the Nation during the entire period of the war." It performed a great work. Its 12,000 members reached every hamlet in Missouri. Missouri's rise from rank fourteen in the value of food crops in 1916 to rank five in 1917, was largely due to Missouri's Council of Defense. It spent its funds wisely and economically. Out of \$100,000 available, it spent only \$76,086.47. Still it was rated as a class "A" council. Only eight other state councils won that distinction, and not one of these had an appropriation under \$1,000,000. Dean Mumford was also State Food Administrator and as such performed equally significant work in behalf of Missouri.

Missourians not only co-operated in organized bodies to produce food and obtain efficient service in support of the war, but they also acted as one body in their individual support of the war. In each of the Liberty Loan drives they subscribed more than their quotas. Even children did their part in purchasing war savings stamps. In November 1917, over 700,000 Missouri women signed the Hoover Food Pledge, placing Missouri first in the nation in proportion to



population and second even in actual numbers. Her Boy Scouts organized and greatly increased the garden food supply. Her universities and colleges offered the services of their experts and of many of their students. Her citizens cooperated with Lieutenant Governor Wallace Crossley, who as State Fuel Director issued and enforced helpful regulations regarding the fuel supply of the State. A delegation of Missourians was among the first to go to Washington, D. C., to list Missouri's lead and zinc mines among the national assets for prosecuting the war. The Missouri farmers increased their yield of crops from 50% to 100% to supply food for the armies. The St. Louis chemical industry increased its output and the packing house centers of Kansas City and St. Joseph increased their volumes. Everywhere in Missouri, as in the nation, conservation, economy, and production increased. Truly Missouri and Missourians supported with sacrifice and patriotism the boys at the front.

#### MISSOURIANS AMONG THE NATION'S LEADERS

In no period of American history have Missourians occupied so many important positions in national and international affairs as they did during the years 1917 and 1918. They were among the leaders in statecraft, diplomacy, military and naval affairs, and in the many high offices connected with the prosecution of the war. Of the scores of Missourians serving, only a few of the foremost can here be mentioned.

The commander of the American army in France was the great Missourian from Linn county, General John J. Pershing. The fine morale of the American soldiers and their wonderful success on the field of battle were exhibited under General Pershing. He was the only leading commander of a nation's army who in this war held his position with satisfaction to his country from the opening to the close



GENERAL JOHN J. PERSHING

of hostilities. He had executive ability and political astuteness. He did not fail once, he never spoke the wrong word, he always left the right impression, and he seems to have committed not one important error either at home or abroad. Somehow, he met every test. He served his country with ability, honor, and success. He was the great Missourian of the war.



MAJOR GENERAL  
ENOCH H. CROWDER

Standing second only to Pershing, was another Missourian, General Enoch H. Crowder, of Grundy county. As judge advocate general of the American army he had for years given splendid service in the thousands of military cases and problems which came up for his decision. When the Selective Service Act became a law, General Crowder was entrusted with its operation. No man had a more difficult task than General Crowder and no man could have performed it better.

The young men of America were listed and without political favoritism 4,000,000 men were inducted into service. The name of General Crowder and his monumental work will live.

Missourians were seemingly everywhere performing service for their country. Commander Joseph H. Taussig, of St. Louis, directed the first American flotilla of destroyers in active American service. Rear Admiral Leigh C. Palmer, of St. Louis, became chief of the bureau of navigation and

as such he had charge of raising 250,000 men for the navy. He was the "Crowder of the Navy." Brigadier General Edgar Russell, of Breckenridge but a native of Pleasant Hill, became chief signal officer of the American forces in France. Rear Admiral Robert E. Coontz, of Hannibal, was placed in charge of the Puget Sound navy yards. And there were scores of other Missourians occupying high positions both in the army and navy.

Missourians also furnished many inventions of value to their country. A. A. Kellogg, of Clinton, invented an instantaneous explosion mechanism for shells, which worked havoc on the battlefield of the enemy. Captain T. S. M. Smith, of St. Louis, solved the problem of crossing the Meuse river by forming a temporary footbridge of canvas floats. Lieutenant Julien A. Gehrung, of St. Louis, discovered a treatment for poison gas, adopted by the French army, which saved thousands of lives and gave sight and hearing to many more. Gregory C. Davison, a native of Jefferson City, was the inventor of a depth bomb to destroy German submarines.

As in the field of invention and war, so in the field of execution in America were Missourians among the leaders. The United States secretary of agriculture, who was director of food production, was Hon. David E. Houston, of St. Louis. Hon. Carl Vrooman, a native of Macon county, was assistant secretary of agriculture and the leader in the speaking publicity campaign for food production and food conservation. George Creel, of Lafayette county, was chairman of the national committee on information and publicity. Hon. David R. Francis, of St. Louis, performed an invaluable service as ambassador to Russia. Hon. Breckenridge Long, of St. Louis, was assistant secretary of state. Hon. A. M. Dockery, of Gallatin, was assistant postmaster general. Edward R. Stettinius, of St. Louis, was general purchasing agent in America both for Great Britain and France. Robert S. Brookings, of St. Louis, was a member of the United

States central purchasing board. J. Lionberger Davis, of St. Louis, was managing director in the office of the national custodian of enemy property. Henry Miller, of Hannibal, was a member of the American commission of railroad experts to assist Russia. John Hunter, of St. Louis, rendered great service in the construction of the American marine fleet. Bainbridge Colby, of St. Louis, was a member of the United States shipping commission. Oscar T. Crosby, of St. Louis, was assistant secretary of the United States treasury. Ford F. Harvey, of Kansas City, was a member of the national Red Cross war finance committee. Miss Julia Stinson, of St. Louis, became chief nurse of the American Expeditionary Force. James F. Holden and J. A. Middleton, of Kansas City, and H. M. Adams, of St. Louis, were appointed on the board of traffic managers of the director general of railroads. Hale Holden, of Kansas City, was appointed superintendent-in-chief of all the railroads of the United States under Director General McAdoo. These were men called from the private walks of life who at the sacrifice of their business interests gave their services to the country. Missourians in Congress were equally loyal and patriotic. Both in State and Nation, in camp and on field, at home and abroad, Missourians served well and faithfully their country.

#### GRATITUDE OF A GRATEFUL PEOPLE

When the 50th General Assembly of Missouri met in 1919 a number of acts were introduced in the interests of the Missouri soldiers who had served from this state. This legislation, expressive of the gratitude of a grateful people, was passed practically by a unanimous vote. It provided for the creation of a Missouri soldiers' and sailors' employment commission. During the first two years of its existence the commission received applications for assistance and secured positions for 19,874 Missouri soldiers, sailors, and marines. An act was passed providing for the publication by the adju-

tant general of a history of Missouri military units in the war and of a biographical sketch of every Missourian in service. This work, which will embrace six volumes, will be distributed to all libraries and public schools in the State. The General Assembly dedicated the east corridor of the new capitol to the purposes of a Missouri soldiers' and sailors' memorial hall. Here are displayed the battle flags and war trophies of Missouri units in all the wars in which the State has taken part. This legislation authorized counties and cities to erect memorials in honor of its citizens who served in the World War and provided that any sum between \$250. and \$1,000. raised for this purpose would be duplicated by the State. Provision was also made directing the adjutant general to procure and present an appropriate medal to each Missouri soldier, sailor, and marine who had served in the World War. An appropriation was made to carry out these provisions and to erect a monument on the battlefield of France in memory of the Missourians who gave their lives there. A large appropriation was also made for reorganizing the Missouri national guard.

At a special election held in August 1921 the people gave further evidence of their gratitude. The Legislature was authorized to incur not exceeding \$15,000,000. indebtedness for bonuses to Missouri soldiers, sailors, and marines. At a special session of the Legislature in November 1921 a soldiers' and sailors' bonus law was passed and payment of the bonus began in 1922. So did Missouri show gratitude in every way to her defenders. It is fitting that "A Century of Military Missouri" should so close.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. In what four divisions does the war record of Missouri fall?
2. How many men and officers did Missouri furnish in the World War?

3. The Missouri National Guard was placed largely in what military division? The Missouri Selective Service men were in what division?
4. What can you say of the record of the 35th and the 89th division?
5. How did the army of citizens at home contribute to the success of the war?
6. What was Governor Gardner's first official war proclamation?
7. Discuss the record of the Missouri Council of Defense.
8. Who was the most renowned Missourian during the war?
9. Name ten Missourians and tell the service each performed for his country during the World War.
10. In what ways have the people of Missouri expressed their gratitude?

## PART VI

# A CENTURY OF MISSOURI'S VICTORIES OF PEACE

1821-1921

*The test of civilization is the ability to co-operate*

### CHAPTER I

#### A CENTURY OF POPULATION

This chapter on population treats of Missourians as a whole. All Missourians are greater and more important than any one Missourian. So important is the study of population that it is necessary to a true understanding of our history. If one knows the facts regarding Missouri's population during her century of statehood, he will possess information which will help explain many things relating to politics, war, education, city building, and industry.

The study of Missouri's population is interesting. The population figures alone may mean little, but when interpreted they tell a fascinating story. This story relates how Missouri grew rapidly in population during her first half century, how she later held her own for thirty years, and how as compared with other states she has been losing rank in population during the last twenty years even though her population continued to grow. This story explains why Missouri was once Democratic by a large majority, then by a fair majority, and later by a small plurality. This story describes how Missouri was once a southern state in population, then a western state, and to-day is a conservative central state. This story tells how the foreign born living in Missouri did much to keep the State in the Union and bring success to Union arms during the Civil War, and how later the for-



eign born helped increase the population of Missouri's cities. It also relates how Missouri was once a rural state with few city dwellers, and how to-day half of her people live in cities and her country districts are losing population. And, finally, it illustrates how Missourians have been settling the West until now more Missourians leave Missouri than Missouri receives from other states. Before telling this story, it should be remembered that a mere decrease or a mere increase in population may mean nothing as regards being good or bad in itself. For example, if Missouri's cities were to double in population and Missouri's country districts were to remain the same in population, instead of hurting the country districts this condition in one respect might aid them in furnishing them with a larger market for their produce close at home. This would mean either higher prices or lower costs, especially freight costs, and would result in more profitable farming, mining, and lumbering. This would mean better homes, schools, churches, and roads in the country. So, it is well to remember that there is a silver lining to the so-called dark cloud.

This subject of Missouri's population will be considered from four points of view. First, a general survey of Missouri's population from 1820 to 1920 will be made, including population by decades, per cent of increase, density per square mile, rank of Missouri, date of organization of counties (which indicates the gradual settling up of the State), and urban, i. e., city, and rural population. Second, the white and the negro population will be set forth. Third, the native and the foreign population will be considered. And, fourth, the native American population in Missouri will be described in regard to the states from which it came. The growth of individual cities will be told under "A Century of City Building," and the emigration of Missourians to other states will be related under "Missouri, the 'Mother of the West' and 'Founder of States.'"

## GENERAL SURVEY

From 1820 to 1870 Missouri rose from rank 23 to rank 5 in population. From 1870 to 1900 she held this rank. Since 1900 Missouri's rank has decreased and to-day it is 9th. During the first fifty years of statehood, from 1820 to 1870, Missouri's population increased 2,500%, or from 66,586 to 1,721,295. Her per cent of increase each decade (every ten years) was very large, the highest being 173% between 1830 and 1840, and her lowest being 47% between 1860 and 1870. From 1870 to 1920 Missouri's total population doubled, but the largest part of this increase was from 1870 to 1900. From 1820 to 1870 Missouri grew from two to seven times as fast in per cent of increase as did the United States but since 1870 the per cent of increase has been less than that of the United States.

Corresponding with Missouri's increase in population has been the increase in density of her population, i. e., the average number of persons to the square mile. In 1820 this density was only .9, or less than one person to the square mile, and in 1920 it was 49.5, or nearly 50 persons to the square mile. The average density for the United States in 1920 was 35.5, so Missouri has 40% more persons to the square mile than the average for the United States. Missouri to-day ranks 9th in population, 18th in area, and 19th in persons per square mile. From this table other interesting facts may be brought out:

## POPULATION OF MISSOURI: 1810 TO 1920

Year	Rank	Total Population	Number Increase over previous census	% Increase over preceding census	% Increase for U. S.	Total Density per sq. mile in Mo.
1810	22	19,783				.3
1820	23	66,586	46,803	236.6	33.1	.9
1830	21	140,455	73,869	110.9	33.5	2.0
1840	16	383,702	243,247	173.2	32.7	5.6
1850	13	682,044	298,342	77.8	35.9	9.9
1860	8	1,182,012	499,968	73.3	35.6	17.2
1870	5	1,721,295	539,283	45.6	22.6	25.
1880	5	2,168,380	447,085	26.0	30.1	31.5
1890	5	2,679,185	510,805	23.6	25.5	39.
1900	5	3,106,665	427,480	16.0	20.7	45.
1910	7	3,293,335	186,670	6.0	21.0	48.
1920	9	3,404,055	110,720	3.4	14.9	49.5

The per cent of increase since 1870 has steadily fallen until between 1910 and 1920 it was only 3.4%. In 1880 Missouri for the first time had a smaller per cent of increase than the United States, and to-day it is less than one-fourth as much. Missouri's population in 1920 was 3,404,055.

The first reason for Missouri's rapid growth from 1820 to 1870 was because she received many more people from other states than she sent to other states. This is called interstate migration. From 1820 to 1870 Missouri gained through interstate migration. The second reason was because Missouri gained by receiving a large number of foreign born people. Of course, Missouri also gained and still gains through natural increase, i. e., through more births than deaths. From 1870 to 1900 Missouri continued to gain by interstate migration and from 1870 to 1890 Missouri also profited largely from immigration of the foreign born, but since her population had become large both of these gains were in per cent smaller as compared to the years when the total population was much less. In short, down to 1900

Missouri, owing especially to her cheap land in the first place and to her profitable manufactures in the second place, attracted people in large numbers. Since 1890, however, the foreign born immigration to Missouri has decreased, and since 1900 Missouri has lost through interstate migration. Cheaper land in the West has attracted more Missourians during the last twenty years than Missouri land has attracted citizens of other states.

As Missouri's population grew what parts of the State were settled? This is answered by looking at a map of Missouri's counties and by checking from the table which shows the years of their organization. A county was not organized until it had settlers, so the gradual settling of Missouri is seen from the counties organized.

#### TABLE OF MISSOURI COUNTIES

(The figures in parenthesis indicate the number of counties organized that year.)

YEAR	COUNTIES ORGANIZED
1812	(5)—Cape Girardeau, New Madrid, St. Charles, St. Louis, Ste. Genevieve.
1813	(1)—Washington.
1816	(1)—Howard.
1818	(8)—Cooper, Franklin, Jefferson, Lincoln, Madison, Montgomery, Pike, Wayne.
1820	(10)—Boone, Callaway, Chariton, Cole, Gasconade, Lillard (now Lafayette), Perry, Ralls, Ray, Saline.
1821	(2)—St. Francois, Scott.
1822	(1)—Clay.
1826	(2)—Jackson, Marion.
1829	(2)—Crawford, Randolph.
1831	(1)—Monroe.
1833	(9)—Carroll, Clinton, Greene, Lewis, Morgan, Pettis, Pulaski, Ripley, Warren.
1834	(2)—Henry, Johnson.
1835	(6)—Barry, Benton, Cass, Polk, Shelby, Stoddard.
1836	(4)—Audrain, Caldwell, Clark, Daviess.

- 1837 (5)—Linn, Livingston, Macon, Miller, Taney. •  
 1838 (3)—Buchanan, Newton, Platte.  
 1841 (15)—Adair, Andrew, Bates, Camden, Dade, Gentry, Grundy,  
 Holt, Jasper, Osage, Ozark, St. Clair, Scotland, Shannon,  
 Wright.  
 1844 (1)—Dallas.  
 1845 (18)—Atchison, Cedar, De Kalb, Dunklin, Harrison, Hickory,  
 Knox, Lawrence, Mercer, Mississippi, Moniteau, Noda-  
 way, Oregon, Putnam, Reynolds, Schuyler, Sullivan, Texas  
 1849 (3)—Butler, Laclede, McDonald.  
 1851 (5)—Bollinger, Dent, Pemiscot, Stone, Vernon.  
 1855 (3)—Barton, Maries, Webster.  
 1857 (4)—Douglass, Howell, Iron, Phelps.  
 1859 (1)—Carter.  
 1860 (1)—Christian.  
 1861 (1)—Worth.  
 1876 —The City of St. Louis was separated from St. Louis  
 County.

In 1820 Missouri had 25 counties, all of which were along the Missouri or the Mississippi river except three. Of these 25 counties, 15 were south and 10 were north of the Missouri river. By 1830 seven more counties had been formed, of which only four were along the two big rivers. This shows that the settlers were beginning to push back into the interior. By 1840 the large number of 30 new counties had been formed, showing that Missouri was gaining fast in new immigrants. By looking again at the table of population it will be seen that between 1830 and 1840 Missouri increased 173.2%. Of these 30 counties, only 6 were along the two rivers. The north prairie section and the south prairie and fertile Ozark section were now beginning to receive settlers. Between 1841 and 1850 Missouri added 37 counties. The large majority of these were the prairie counties, north and south, and the rich bottom counties in southeast Missouri, but one-fourth were highland Ozark counties. By 1850 all the counties except one north of the Missouri river had been organized. From 1851 to

1861 the last 15 counties were added, of which 10 were high-land Ozark counties.

Next in importance to an increase or a decline in total population, is the distribution of the population in the city and the country. This is referred to as urban population and rural population. Urban population, according to the United States census, includes all inhabitants living in cities of 2,500 or more persons. When the rural population of a state increases fast it usually indicates some of these facts,—good land at cheap prices, good land at lower prices than most states, profitable farming, a per man yearly income nearly equal to or higher than that of a city laborer, and perhaps foreign emigration. When the rural population of a state declines fast it usually indicates some of these facts,—good land at lower prices in other states, unprofitable farming, a per man yearly income less than that of a city laborer, the growth of cities, and perhaps a smaller foreign immigration. It should be remembered that the entire United States has been steadily increasing both in urban and in rural population, but the per cent of urban increase has been much higher than the per cent of rural increase. Missouri has been affected by the national tendency in population just as she has been affected by national politics and national wars. In some decades Missouri has gone contrary to the national tendency in population but over a period of years she has gradually followed the general trend.

The century of Missouri's population from the viewpoint of urban and rural divides itself into three periods. The first period from 1820 to 1860 saw her rural population growing at a very rapid rate. Missouri's cheap land attracted native Americans and foreign born citizens by the hundreds of thousands. The period was one of rural growth. There were, of course, many towns, some of fair size and of great trading importance, but there was only one large city, St. Louis, with a population over 10,000. St. Louis had 160,000

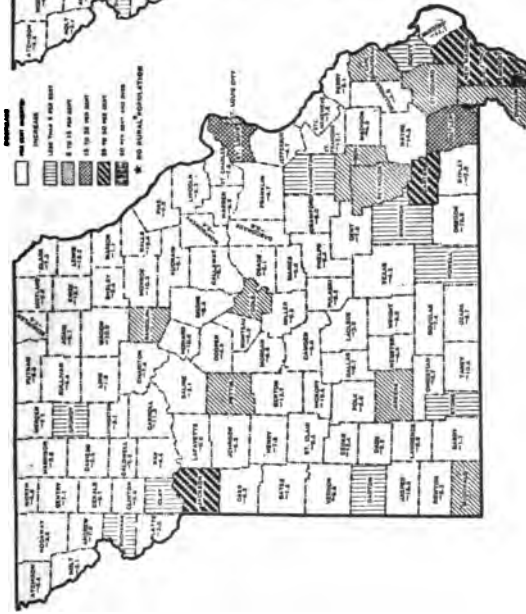
and had been growing at an exceedingly rapid rate since 1840.

The second period from 1860 to 1900 saw Missouri's rural population continue to grow fast but at a much slower rate than her urban. Between 1860 and 1870 St. Louis was joined by St. Joseph and Kansas City in the class of big cities. The first two gained 100% and the last 600% in population during these ten years. Moreover, their combined increase was one-third of the total increase of Missouri in actual numbers. Still, in 1870 less than 25% of Missouri's population lived in towns of size. Between 1870 and 1880 the per cent of increase of the three large cities was actually less than the rest of the state, being only 21% compared with 27½%. Of course, in numbers the rural population growth was several times the urban growth. Only 23% or less than one-fourth of Missouri's population lived in cities over 4,000 in 1880. Missouri was still a rural state with a fast growing rural population. Between 1880 and 1890 conditions of growth were reversed. Now the three cities forged ahead again with an increase of 298,000 or nearly three-fifths of Missouri's total increase. Missouri now had 29 cities of 4,000 and over and by 1890 these 29 cities had 30% of Missouri's total population. Further, Missouri's urban population in cities of over 2,500 (the census reports before 1890 do not classify the cities of 2,500) was 32% of the total. But Missouri was still rural by a big majority. Between 1890 and 1900 this urban tendency was repeated, the cities grew faster than the country both in per cent and in numbers. The urban increase was 32% and the rural increase was 8½%. Twenty-one Missouri counties lost population. By 1900 Missouri had 50 cities of over 2,500 and 36% of Missouri's total population lived in these cities and 64% lived in the smaller towns and in the country. Even the three large cities now had 27% of the population. But, if all Missouri towns in 1900 are included regardless of size

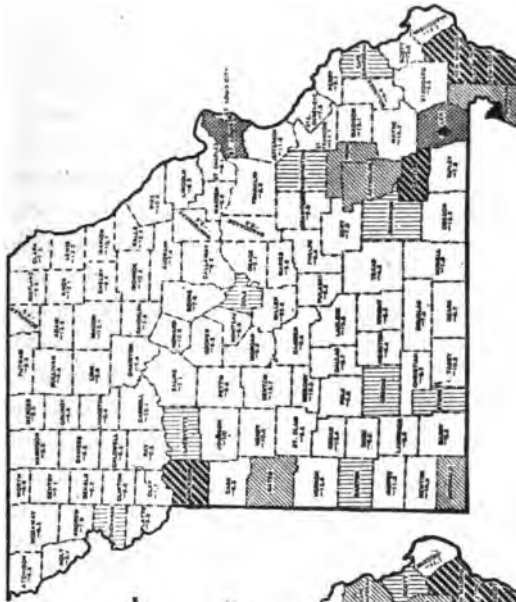
**PER CENT OF INCREASE OR DECREASE OF POPULATION OF MISSOURI, BY COUNTIES: 1910-1990.**

Rural population is defined as that residing outside of incorporated places having 2,500 inhabitants or more.

**TOTAL POPULATION.**



**RURAL POPULATION.**





46% of Missouri's population lived there, and only 54% lived in the country. Missouri had almost reached an equilibrium between city and country population.

Conditions in Missouri in 1900 were ready for a tremendous growth in urban population, especially in the large cities, and for a decline or at least a standstill in country and rural population. (Rural population includes all towns under 2,500.) These were the conditions: rising land prices in Missouri, rising labor wages, slow rise in farm product prices, cheap land to the west, northwest, and southwest, easy transportation to these lands, profitable manufacturing and big railroad centers tending to build up the cities, and decline in foreign immigration to Missouri. And this was the result. Between 1900 and 1910, 62 Missouri cities over 2,500 had a gain of 24% which was 147% of Missouri's total gain! This meant that rural Missouri had lost 3½% for the first time in her history, and 71 counties showed decreases. Urban Missouri now had 42½% of Missouri's population and rural Missouri had 57½%. But if all towns are added to urban Missouri, there was 53.4% of Missouri's population in towns and 46.6% in the country. Between 1910 and 1920 the same tendency was seen. Urban Missouri had a gain of 14% which was 171% of Missouri's total gain. Rural Missouri had lost 4% in population and 89 counties showed decreases. Urban Missouri by 1920 had 46.6% of Missouri's population and rural Missouri had 53.4%. If all towns were added to urban Missouri, there was 58% in towns and 42% in the country. Briefly, between 1900 and 1920 urban Missouri had increased 40% and rural Missouri (including towns under 2,500) had lost 8%. Since 1890, a period of 30 years, urban Missouri has nearly doubled (83%), and rural Missouri has been at a standstill in population (actual loss was about 5,000). Since 1890 Missouri has lost in foreign born and since 1900 she has lost in interstate migration, i. e., more American citizens have left Missouri than have come to Missouri.

## WHITE AND COLORED

Missouri has never had a large colored population compared with the white population. This colored population is a negro population since Missouri even in 1920 had less than one thousand persons of color other than negroes. From 1820 to 1860 nearly all negroes in Missouri were slaves, the number of free negroes never being more than 3.3% of the total negro population. After the Civil War all negroes were free.

The negro population has never increased so fast in numbers as the white, and only twice (1820-1830 and 1910-1920) has it had a larger per cent of increase. Moreover the negro population has twice (1860-1870 and 1900-1910) had an actual decrease in numbers. The largest increase in negro population was from 1820 to 1860, during the years of slavery, when it increased 108,000 or 1,000%. During the same period the whites increased over one million or 1,800%. From 1860 to 1920 the negro increased only 60,000 or 50%. During the same period the whites increased 2,161,000 or 200%. This table summarizes the facts:

## MISSOURI'S WHITE AND NEGRO POPULATION

Year	White	% White Increase	Negro	% Negro Increase
1810	17,227		3,618	
1820	55,988	225	10,569	164
1830	114,795	105	25,660	143
1840	323,888	182	59,814	133
1850	592,004	83	90,040	70
1860	1,063,489	80	118,503	32
1870	1,603,146	51	118,071	(decrease)
1880	2,022,826	26	145,350	23
1890	2,528,458	25	150,184	3½
1900	2,944,843	16	161,234	7
1910	3,134,932	6	157,452	(decrease)
1920	3,225,044	3	178,241	13

## NATIVE AMERICAN BORN AND FOREIGN BORN

Missouri has always been a state of native born citizens, that is citizens born in the United States. To-day 94½% of Missouri's population is native born and only 5½% is foreign born. However, in decades past the foreign born percentage has been much higher. Missouri had some foreign born before 1850, principally Germans, but not a large number. Between 1850 and 1860 Missouri had her largest increase both in number and in per cent of foreign born. In 1860 about 14% of Missouri's population was foreign born. The increase was also very large between 1860 and 1870, but since 1870 the increase has been getting smaller and smaller and during 30 years of the last 50 years Missouri's foreign born has actually decreased in number. To-day Missouri's foreign born is smaller in number than in any census year since 1860. This table will show the trend of Missouri's foreign born population since 1850.

## MISSOURI'S FOREIGN BORN, 1850-1920

Year	Foreign Born	Increase Foreign Born	% Increase Foreign Born	% Total Population
1850	76,570			11
1860	160,541	83,949	110	14
1870	222,267	61,726	38	13
1880	211,576	-10,689	-5	10
		(decrease)	(decrease)	
1890	234,348	23,291	11	9
1900	216,378	-18,490	-8	7
		(decrease)	(decrease)	
1910	229,779	13,400	6	7
1920	186,026	-43,753	-19	5.5
		(decrease)	(decrease)	

This foreign born population has also changed in character since 1850. In 1850 three-fifths had come from Germany, one-fifth from Ireland, and the other one-fifth largely from

Canada and the British Isles. In 1860 the proportion was about the same except that now one-fourth had come from Ireland and only a little over one-half from Germany. Twenty years later, 1880, the proportion still remained the same but some Swiss had appeared. By 1900 the German born still made up one-half of the foreign born but the Irish born had fallen to one-seventh. The decline in Irish born was largely filled with foreign born from Russia, Italy, Austria, and Sweden. In 1920 the German born was only 30%, the Irish 8%, and the Canadian-English 9%, but the foreign born from Russia had risen to 10%, from Italy to 8%, from Austria and Hungary 9%, and from Czecho-Slovakia and Poland to 7%. Briefly, almost one-half of Missouri's foreign born in 1920 came from countries which had sent practically no people here in 1860.

Where do Missouri's foreign born live, in the country or the cities? In 1900, 70% lived in Missouri cities, in 1910, 76% lived in Missouri cities, and in 1920, nearly 80%. Missouri's foreign born population is an urban population.

#### NATIVITY

##### *Sources of Missouri's Native American Population*

Missouri is a state of native born Americans. This has been true for the last one hundred years. In 1920 nine out of every ten persons in Missouri had been born in the United States, the actual proportion being 94.5%, and seven out of every ten persons had been born in Missouri. Down to 1850 the native free population of Missouri had been born either in Missouri or in the southern states lying to the east. The northern states had contributed some settlers but only a small per cent of the total population. The five great southern states, Kentucky, Tennessee, Virginia, North Carolina, and Maryland (especially the first three) had been the homes of Missourians. Missouri was settled largely by southerners.

Between 1850 and 1860 five northern states began pouring in settlers, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Pennsylvania, and New York. But even in 1860 there were nearly twice as many native free born in Missouri from the southern states as from the northern states. By 1870 the northern native born whites exceeded the southern native born whites, although, of course, owing to the great increase of persons born in Missouri, the State was still largely southern in stock. By 1880 the northern immigrants were 40% larger than the southern, and Iowa and Kansas had joined the other northern states in sending Missouri settlers, while Maryland had practically dropped out of consideration. In 1880 the Missouri settlers of southern birth reached their highest number. Since that year the southern states have gradually sent fewer and fewer settlers. In 1900 the northern born settlers were over twice as large as the southern born and in 1910 they were two and one-half times as large. The principal cause of this change has been the fact that Missouri land down to 1860 was cheaper than southern land. The Civil War prostrated the southern states, reduced the growth of their adult white population, and, owing to various causes, resulted in making land very cheap in those states after the war. This land remained cheap for decades. On the other hand, although Missouri land was cheap, it was rising faster than southern land. But, the land in northern states was rising even faster. So, the cheaper Missouri land attracted settlers from the northern states. This also partly explains why Missouri has become a close state politically, since before 1870 her settlers had come largely from Democratic states and after 1870 her settlers had come largely from Republican states. Missouri, since 1870, received more northern settlers than southern. This table makes clear these and other interesting facts.

MISSOURI'S NATIVE AMERICAN POPULATION SHOWING NUMBER BORN IN MISSOURI, AND NUMBER BORN IN THE NORTHERN AND THE SOUTHERN STATES WHICH CONTRIBUTED MOST TO MISSOURI'S POPULATION:

Year	Total Native Free	Born in Missouri	Born in Ky., Tenn., Va., N. C., Md., and Ark.	Born in Ill., O., Pa., N. Y., Iowa, and Kan.
1850	520,826	277,604	176,653	49,737
1860	906,540	475,246	253,639	138,486
	Total native white			
1870	1,380,972	788,491	238,656 <sup>1</sup>	288,335 <sup>2</sup>
	Total native population			
1880	1,956,802	1,268,641	258,988 <sup>3</sup>	355,537 <sup>4</sup>
1900	2,890,286	2,035,251	224,719	501,845
1910	3,063,556	2,222,925	191,489 <sup>5</sup>	495,610
1920	4,225,430	2,382,282	Born in all other states 821,375 <sup>6</sup>	

<sup>1</sup>Arkansas included for first time.

<sup>2</sup>Iowa included for first time.

<sup>3</sup>Maryland not included,—too small.

<sup>4</sup>Kansas included for first time.

<sup>5</sup>North Carolina not included,—too small.

<sup>6</sup>The 1920 census figures by states are not available at this time.

### INTERSTATE MIGRATION

Down to 1900 Missouri attracted a larger and larger number of settlers from other states, but beginning in 1860 Missouri lost a larger and larger number of those born in Missouri who went to other states. However, down to 1900 Missouri gained more than she lost through this interstate migration, i. e., native born Americans coming to Missouri and native born Missourians leaving Missouri. In 1850 only one native free born Missourian in eight to nine lived out of Missouri, in 1860 one in six to seven, in 1870 one in six, and in 1880 one in five to six. But in 1900 one in four to five native born Missourians lived out of Missouri, in 1910

one in three to four, and in 1920 one in three. The reasons for this emigration of Missourians born in Missouri to other states will be set forth in the "Missouri, 'Mother of the West' and 'Founder of States.'" Of course, it was largely due to cheaper land in the West. The result of this growing emigration of Missourians was to show an actual net loss for Missouri through interstate migration in 1910. By 1920 this loss was 315,235. Another result was to lessen the natural growth of the Democratic vote since part of rural Missouri, which was at first largely of southern Democratic stock, sold its land at higher prices than it had paid and many moved westward and southwestward to buy cheaper land. It should be remembered that Republican rural Missouri counties have also lost population but the Democratic rural counties, being the first settled, were among the first to lose and, therefore, have lost more. This table will make clear other facts:

#### INTERSTATE MIGRATION TO AND FROM MISSOURI

Year	Born in Mo. and Living in Missouri	Born in Mo. and Living in Other States	Born in Other States and Living in Missouri	Net Gain or Loss by Interstate Migration
1850 <sup>1</sup>	277,604	37,824	243,222	205,398 Gain
1860 <sup>1</sup>	475,246	87,043	428,222	339,179 "
1870 <sup>2</sup>	788,491	148,073	592,481	444,408 "
1880 <sup>2</sup>	1,268,641	285,577	688,161	402,584 "
1890 <sup>4</sup>	1,662,134		782,181	
1900	2,035,251	618,248	855,035	236,787 "
1910	2,222,925	918,958	822,738	92,220 Loss
1920	2,382,282	1,136,610	821,377	315,235 "

<sup>1</sup>Applies only to native born free.

<sup>2</sup>Applies to native born whites.

<sup>3</sup>Applies to total native born from 1880 to 1920.

<sup>4</sup>Figures are approximate.

## SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. Why is a study of population essential to the understanding of Missouri history?
2. If we interpret population figures what transitions and events in Missouri history may be explained?
3. What rank in population has Missouri held since 1820?
4. With increase of population what was the change in the location of the newly organized counties?
5. Define the terms, rural population, urban population, and density of population.
6. Missouri's population is considered from what four points of view?
7. What factors will influence the increase or decrease of rural population?
8. How do you explain the rapid growth of the rural population from 1820 to 1860?
9. From 1860 to 1900 Missouri's rural population continued to grow fast but at a much slower rate than her urban. Why?
10. Beginning in 1900 why was there such a rapid growth in urban population?
11. What per cent of Missouri's population is native born and what per cent foreign born?
12. Is the foreign born population an urban or a rural population?
13. Down to 1850 what states sent the most settlers to Missouri?
14. Beginning in 1860 what great change took place in the immigrant population to Missouri?
15. Why did northern settlers so outnumber the southern settlers after 1860?
16. If northern settlers predominate over southern settlers what will be the effect on the state politically?
17. What other factor in population has tended to decrease the Democratic vote and increase the Republican vote?
18. Why have rural Democratic counties lost more through interstate migration than rural Republican counties?



## CHAPTER II

### MISSOURI "FOUNDER OF STATES" AND "MOTHER OF THE WEST"

Virginia is "the Mother of Presidents," Kentucky "the Mother of Governors," and Missouri "the Mother of the West and Founder of States." This means that Virginia has been prominent in giving birth to presidents, Kentucky in producing governors for herself and other commonwealths, and Missouri in opening and settling the West and in supplying settlers who aided in founding western states. Missouri deserves this title through her explorers, traders, soldiers, statesmen, and settlers.

Under the Austins of Potosi, Missouri, Missourians fought for Texas' independence and later made homes in the "Lone Star State" by the thousands. Missourians led in the settling and founding of Oregon. They were prominent in the settling of California. Under Doniphan and his army of Missourians they added the Southwest to the Nation. Later they rushed in large numbers to help settle Colorado, Idaho, Kansas, Montana, Oklahoma, and Washington. They gave Colorado, California, New Mexico, and Wisconsin, their first governors; and they later gave governors to Arizona, Idaho, and Utah. In addition, they have furnished to western states, statesmen, senators, and representatives in Congress.

Missouri's central geographical location and her early settlement were the main causes for the prominent part played by her in the West. This part began in trade and exploration and has been told under "Missourians the Trail-makers and Traders of the West." It is not necessary to retell the story of the great exploring expeditions of Lewis and Clark, Pike, Long, and Fremont. All started from Missouri and were composed largely of Missourians. Missouri was the pathfinder of the West. It is also not necessary to

retell the story of Missouri's fur trade to the west and northwest and of her great Santa Fe trade to the southwest. Through this western trade Missouri became the commercial center of the West and along these trade routes, Missourians later traveled to settle the West.

Missouri also deserves credit for the important services rendered the West through two of her great statesmen, Senator Thomas H. Benton and Senator Lewis F. Linn. These two men worked harder and more successfully to obtain and retain the great Oregon Country, i. e., Washington, Oregon, and Idaho, than any others in the United States. To them this nation and these three states owe a great debt. In fact, although Linn was Missouri's senator and died on Missouri soil, he was called "The Father of Oregon." He was also called the "Iowa Senator" because he did so much for the early settlers in that territory. Senator Benton was the West's greatest advocate and friend in the United States Senate. His life was largely devoted to the West. He advocated cheap government land to enable settlers to buy, and he urged government protection against the Indians to enable settlers to stay.

#### MISSOURIANS SETTLE MANY WESTERN STATES

Down to 1850 and even later Missouri was largely a pioneer state in population. Her population was small and her land was cheap. Therefore, there was no great incentive for any larger number of her people to emigrate westward. Only states west of the Mississippi river will be considered here since the states east of the Mississippi have sent Missouri more people than Missouri has sent to them. This latter was true of Iowa after 1870. By 1850 only 37,824 Missouri-born lived outside of Missouri. These had gone principally to California, Arkansas, Texas, and Oregon, in the order named. Although Missouri had sent twice as many to each of the first three as she had to Oregon, still.

in proportion to the native born of other states, Missouri ranked higher in Oregon than in any state. In fact, in Oregon there were twice as many Missourians as there were citizens from any other state. Missourians ranked first in number in Oregon down to 1900, a period of fifty years. Missourians largely settled Oregon. In 1910 there were 25,456 native born Missourians in Oregon and they ranked third in number. Missourians ranked high in California in 1850 and held next to the highest rank in number for forty years. Since 1900 Missourians have ranked third in California. In 1910 there were 67,786 Missourians in California. Although many Missourians have gone to Texas, they have not ranked high in number compared with the emigrants from southern states. In 1910 there were 59,061 Missourians in Texas and they ranked fifth. The same general condition applies to Arkansas as to Texas. In 1910 there were 54,046 Missourians in Arkansas and they ranked third.

By 1870 Missourians were settling other states besides California, Arkansas, Texas, and Oregon. Thousands were now flocking to Kansas, Colorado, Montana, Idaho, and Washington,—especially to the first three. There were more Missourians in Kansas in 1870 than there were in any other state except Missouri. They numbered 23,829 but compared to the natives of other states they ranked only fourth. In 1900 they had risen to second rank and in 1910 to first rank. From 1870 to 1900 more Missourians went to Kansas than to any other state, and by 1910 there were 139,803 Missourians living there.

In 1870 the Missourians in Colorado numbered 1,595 and they ranked fourth. In 1880 they numbered 12,435 and ranked third. In 1900 they numbered 31,188 and ranked second. And in 1910 they had risen to 50,729 and ranked first.

In 1870 the Missourians in Montana numbered 1,252 and they ranked second. In 1880 they numbered 2,493 and

they ranked first. In 1900 they numbered 10,562 and still ranked first, but in 1910 they ranked third although they numbered 15,703.

In 1870 there were only 533 Missourians in Idaho but so small was the population of the territory that they ranked third. In 1880 there were 1,393 and they ranked second. They held this rank until 1900. In 1910 they numbered 15,289 and ranked third.

In 1870 Washington had 936 Missourians and they ranked fourth. By 1880 they had risen to second rank and numbered 3,160. In 1900 they had fallen to seventh rank and numbered 16,757; but by 1910 they had risen to fifth rank and numbered 38,665.

By 1880 Missourians had begun going to Wyoming where they numbered 1,163 and ranked fourth. In 1900 they had increased to 4,412 and in 1910 to 7,295, but they have never ranked higher than fourth.

By 1900 Missourians had appeared in varying numbers in Indian and Oklahoma territories, Nebraska, New Mexico, and Arizona. Excepting only Kansas, there were more Missourians in 1900 in what later became Oklahoma than in any other state outside Missouri. They numbered 80,304 and ranked second. By 1910 Oklahoma ranked first in native born Missourians and Missourians ranked second in Oklahoma. They numbered 162,266.

In 1900 Nebraska claimed 26,588 Missourians and in 1910 they had increased to 32,929. Compared to other states, Missourians have not ranked high in number in Nebraska.

In 1900 there were 3,458 Missourians in New Mexico and they ranked second. In 1910 they had increased to 11,605 and had the same rank.

In 1900 there were 3,187 Missourians in Arizona and they ranked fourth. In 1910 they had increased to 5,206 and had advanced to third rank. Missourians have settled

## CHAPTER III

### A CENTURY OF MISSOURI AGRICULTURE

Agriculture is Missouri's most important industry. It employs more people and produces more wealth than any other. Missouri is a great agricultural state. It ranks from fifth to eighth in the annual value of all crops and normally stands fourth in the number and value of live stock. Missouri ranks sixth in the number of farms and in the number of acres in farms, and seventh in the value of farm land and farm buildings. In 1920 Missouri had 263,004 farms, embracing  $34\frac{3}{4}$  million acres. The total value of these farms, including land and buildings, live stock and machinery, was over  $3\frac{1}{2}$  billion dollars. These figures give some idea of the supremacy held by agriculture in Missouri.

The present status of agriculture in Missouri is the result of a century of work and progress. During part of this time the growth was rapid and the farmer prospered, but during other years the growth was slow and sometimes the farmer suffered severely through crop failures, animal diseases, and low prices for his products. The two greatest aids to Missouri agriculture were the introduction of agricultural machinery and the improvement of transportation through the steamboat and the railroad. The former directly increased production; the latter made farming a profitable business. To-day Missouri agriculture has greater opportunity for future development than ever before.

#### PRIMITIVE PERIOD TO 1840

Down to 1840 Missouri agriculture was in the primitive stage. The farm homestead was largely independent of the rest of the world. It was an economic unit which produced the food, clothing, shelter, and most of the manufactured articles used on the farm. Under this system the farm was primarily cultivated to provide the necessities of the family

and the home and not primarily for the purpose of making money or accumulating wealth. Of course men made money by buying and selling farms but men farmed primarily to make a living and not to make money. The acreage of cultivated land was small and there was practically no machinery. The tools, which were handmade, were few in number and were crude. Corn, the main crop, was usually poorly cultivated, owing to poor plows; wheat was not raised in large quantities owing to the laborious methods used in cutting by sickle or scythe, threshing it by stamping or pounding, and separating it from the chaff and straw by hand or a hand-driven machine. As late as 1839 the annual production of corn in Missouri was only 17 million bushels and the production of wheat was only one million bushels. Even had there been a great surplus of grains, the difficulties of transportation were too great to warrant extensive development of agriculture. The river steamboat was just entering its great phase of usefulness, the dirt road was impassable half of the year, and the railroad had not arrived in Missouri.

Land was cheap, great areas of good government land being still obtainable at \$1.25 an acre. The land was rich and produced in abundance. The principal garden vegetables, except tomatoes, were grown. Living was cheap and no one was in need of meat owing to wild game and forest-fed hogs. The price of board and lodging was \$1.00 a week and a 15 pound turkey sold for 12½ cents in the '20s. Small orchards were plentiful and both wild and tame fruits were abundant. The pioneer farm folks were very sociable. They helped each other in every way possible. However, they had few conveniences, very few schools, poor roads, little medical attention, much sickness and a high death rate among women and children. The forests were full of wild animals, some harmful to both man and beast; poisonous snakes were common; fevers and chills were fre-

quent in the home; and prairie and forest fires sometimes devastated whole areas of land. Aside from lack of transportation, the pioneer farmer's greatest hardship was clearing land. As early as 1825 it cost in labor at 62½ cents a day about \$6.00 to clear an acre of land. A very few acres of cleared land were sufficient to raise the family food. In short, during this primitive period, it was easy to obtain land and make a living, but it was difficult and it was unnecessary to make money by farming.

#### PERIOD OF TRANSITION, 1840-1860

During this period the farm changed to a money making business. Under the new plan the farm was cultivated primarily for the purpose of making money and secondarily for the purpose of providing food and clothing for the family. Of course, the change from the old system was gradual and progressed at different rates in different sections. In some parts of Missouri the old self-sufficing homestead still existed at the end of this period while in other parts it had passed away before 1840. However, there was a general change during these twenty years between 1840 and 1860 toward making the farm a money making business. Land was now becoming more valuable and much of the best land had been taken up by settlers. In parts of the State farm machinery was being introduced, combined with better tools and implements. The reaper, the iron plow, the thresher, and other labor saving machinery had appeared. This made possible greater production of grains. By 1849 the annual production of corn in Missouri had increased to 36 million bushels and of wheat to nearly three million bushels,—an increase in ten years in corn of over 100% and in wheat of nearly 200%. By 1859 corn had again doubled to nearly 73 million bushels and wheat had increased to over four million bushels. Corn has always been Missouri's main crop but in those days it was much more important compared with



BREAKING PRAIRIE IN 1835



wheat than it is to-day. For example, in 1859 Missouri produced 17 bushels of corn to one bushel of wheat, but in 1920 Missouri produced only six bushels of corn to one bushel of wheat. Another factor which was making farming a money making business was the development of transportation. The roads were being improved, the steamboat traffic was flourishing, and the railroad had appeared. St. Louis and other markets were growing fast. All of these combined with a remarkable increase in population and the introduction of improved live stock, brought about a new era in agriculture in Missouri. The farmer was prosperous and making money, his land was increasing in value, his production was increasing, and population was growing. Missouri was now an agricultural state with great possibilities.

#### PERIOD OF RAPID GROWTH, 1860-1890

The period from 1860 to 1890 marked another era of rapid growth and expansion. Missouri increased greatly in population, most of which was rural, and large areas of new land were brought under cultivation. Following the Civil War a land boom appeared. Agricultural produce prices were high, the acreage yield was high, and the farmer made money. His land advanced rapidly and an after-war prosperity was present. This gave place to a severe depression in the '70s. Land fell in value and corn averaged only 32 cents a bushel compared to 43 cents in the latter '60s. Wheat fell from \$1.08 to 93 cents a bushel but this decline was not so severe as in the case of corn. This difference in decline between corn and wheat combined with the use of agricultural machinery greatly stimulated the production of wheat. Corn increased from an annual average of 66 million bushels to 103 million bushels, an increase of 56%; wheat increased from 5½ million bushels to nearly 17 million bushels, an increase of 200%. The value of the wheat crop was now equal to one-half the value of the corn crop whereas

in the latter '60s its value had been only one-fifth of the corn crop. In the '80s the price of corn rose to an average of 35½ cents a bushel and the production rose to an average of 170 million bushels, an increase of 65%. Wheat fell in price to 79 cents and, although agriculture was rapidly expanding and transportation was improving, the average production of wheat rose to only 21¾ million bushels, an increase of only 36%. Moreover, the total annual value of the corn crop rose to 57 million dollars but the value of the wheat crop was only 17 million dollars. By 1890 Missouri was nearing her full acreage both in wheat and in corn. During the next thirty years the corn acreage increased only 10% and the wheat acreage about 20%.

The production of oats was increased even more rapidly than wheat during this period from 1860 to 1890, rising from an average of 5 million bushels in the latter '60s to 31 million bushels in the '80s, an increase of 500%. The production of tame hay also increased greatly. Corresponding with the great growth in grain farming was the expansion of the live stock industry. This industry also improved through the introduction of better breeds. Milk cows more than doubled in number and in value. Other cattle increased nearly 200% in number and about 150% in value. Hogs increased 150% in number and in value. Sheep alone showed little improvement in number, price per head, or value. Horses more than doubled in number and nearly tripled in value. But it was in mules that Missouri advanced fastest. From an average of only a little over 70,000 head in the latter '60s, Missouri mules had increased to 230,000 head by 1890 and their value had risen from 4½ million dollars to 15 million dollars. Farm wages showed only small increases.

This period from 1860 to 1890, excepting the four years of war and the depression of the '70s, was on the whole one of great agricultural expansion.

## PERIOD OF DEPRESSION, 1891-1900

The period of Missouri agriculture from 1891 to 1900 was as a whole the worst ever experienced. The depression was nation-wide and prices dropped to low levels. The average price of corn was only  $29\frac{3}{4}$  cents and, although the average production was slightly higher than in the '80s, the average value was one-seventh less. Wheat dropped to an average of 62 cents a bushel and the total average value decreased one-third. Agricultural organizations sprang into new life and attempted to obtain relief through political action. The entire country was prostrate for several years from a business standpoint but conditions began to materially improve toward the close of the period. It seems that however severe is a depression in Missouri and in the United States, of one thing the people may be certain—improvement and prosperity will again appear.

## PERIOD OF PROSPERITY AND RISING PRICES, 1901-1920

This period from 1901 to 1920 has five characteristics,—great agricultural prosperity, rising land and produce prices, better farming as a result of agricultural education and higher priced land, increased production, and decreasing rural population. The last has been considered. Never in the history of Missouri was there such widespread prosperity. This prosperity, the result of such causes as higher prices and greater production, found expression in better homes and schools, improved farms, higher standards of living, finer live stock, better machinery, good roads, automobiles, and easier working conditions. The World War and the after-war boom marked the climax to this general prosperity.

The rising land and produce prices were equally marked. Between 1900 and 1910 land doubled in value. During the war and post-war boom much of the land again doubled and

nearly all land increased over 50%. The prices for grain and live stock showed steady advances, reaching very high figures during the war and post-war period. Between 1901 and 1910 the average price of corn rose to 46 cents, between 1911 and 1920 to 85 cents, and during 1917, 1918, and 1919 it averaged \$1.32. Wheat averaged 81 cents between 1901 and 1910, \$1.39 between 1911 and 1920, and \$1.87 between 1916 and 1920. Milk cows doubled in price and for three years averaged over \$70. a head compared with \$25. in the '90s. Other cattle increased in price but not to such an extent. Hogs rose from \$4.25 a head in the '90s to over \$6.00 between 1901 and 1910, to \$13.00 between 1911 and 1920, and to \$18.50 in 1918 and 1919. Horses and mules more than doubled in value during these twenty years, and sheep showed even greater gain in total value. The most marked increases in all live stock were during the last ten years. To offset part of the profits from the rising prices, farm labor also doubled in price and fertilizer costs increased. However, the farmer was now working on a rising market which meant a larger income.

The Missouri farmer not only became more prosperous and received higher prices for his products during this period but he also became a better farmer. Through the agricultural college of the University of Missouri, he and his children received instruction in scientific farming, in increasing the yield of crops, in improving the breeds of stock, and in building up the fertility of the soil. The state board of agriculture through its bulletins, reports, and lecturers, was another educational force of great service. Various agricultural organizations, including the farm bureaus and the county agents, carried this better farming campaign to every door. County and state fairs were held. The big agricultural papers and magazines now reached every rural community and were read by tens of thousands of Missouri farmers. Even the large city dailies issued a weekly edition de-

voted largely to agricultural news. Agriculture was included in the course of study in grade and high schools, and in the state teachers' colleges. Everywhere and by every means the Missouri farmer received aid, encouragement, and instruction in better farming. The rising value of land also made better farming necessary. A poor farmer may make a living and even a profit on good land at \$50. an acre although he owes 50% of its value, but it is necessary for one to be a good farmer to make a profit on \$100. to \$200. an acre land if he owes 50% of its value. Since about one-half of the farms were mortgaged, i. e., the owners owed part of the value, this was an important item in the cost of farming.

As a result of better farming and of higher prices for agricultural products, production increased. The corn crop rose from an average of 171 million bushels in the '90s to 200 million bushels between 1901 and 1910. From 1911 to 1920 it averaged 177 million bushels, and for five of these twenty years the crop rose to over 240 million bushels. Wheat showed even greater gain. Between 1901 and 1910 the wheat crop averaged 30 million bushels compared with 18 million in the '90s, and between 1911 and 1920 it rose to nearly 37 million bushels. For the two years 1918 and 1919 the wheat crop actually averaged 56½ million bushels. Oats also showed a great increase during the last ten years of this period. From this table other interesting facts are made clear.

### CORN

(YEARLY AVERAGES)

	Acreage (000 omitted)	Bushel yield per acre	Bushel production (000 omitted)	Price per bushel	Value on Farm (000 omitted)
1866-70	2,208	30	66,762	\$0.432	\$28,875
1871-80	3,482	29.9	103,899	.321	31,185
1881-90	6,260	27.1	170,089	.355	56,900
1891-00	6,168	27.6	171,502	.297	49,868

1901-10	6,841	29.1	200,043	\$0.46	88,059
1911-20	6,837	26.	177,441	.854	146,358

## WHEAT

1866-70	409	14	5,662	\$1.08	\$ 5,615
1871-80	1,375	12.2	17,079	.92 7/10	15,492
1881-90	1,903	11.5	21,703	.79 1/10	16,955
1891-00	1,563	11.5	18,275	.61 9/10	11,267
1901-10	2,239	13.5	30,373	.80 9/10	23,845
1911-20	2,574	14.1	36,814	1.39	53,250

## SUMMARY

The progress of Missouri agriculture during the last century has been remarkable. Down to 1840 farming was of the primitive, self-sustaining type. In fact, even down to 1850 farming in Missouri was still in its infancy and had just begun to grow. In 1850 there were 54,458 farms in Missouri, containing  $9\frac{3}{4}$  million acres, and of this only  $\frac{1}{3}$  was improved land. In 1920 there were 263,004 farms, containing  $34\frac{3}{4}$  million acres, and of this nearly  $\frac{3}{4}$  was improved land. In 1850 the value of all farm property in Missouri, including land, buildings, machinery, and livestock, was 87 million dollars and this property averaged only \$8.95 to the acre. In 1920 this had increased to over  $3\frac{1}{2}$  billion dollars and averaged \$103.27 to the acre. Although the average Missouri farm in 1920 was only 132.2 acres compared with the average farm of 178.7 acres in 1850, the former was valued at \$13,654. and the latter was valued at \$1,599. In 1850 there was \$75. worth of machinery and implements on the farm compared with \$526. worth in 1920. The land and buildings on the average Missouri farm in 1850 were valued at \$1,161. compared with \$11,645. in 1920.

Considered from every viewpoint, Missouri agriculture has made progress which is truly remarkable. The Missouri

farmer in 1920 was worth more, lived better, farmed better, and produced more, than at any previous time in the State's history. The standard corps of corn and wheat will doubtless continue to be the foundation of Missouri agriculture but these will be supplemented in value with the development of the State's great possibilities in the fields of dairying and fruit raising. Missouri already stands first in poultry and is an important fruit state. Great as has been the progress of Missouri agriculture during these one hundred years, a progress even greater awaits Missouri agriculture in the future.

### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. Why is agriculture an important industry in Missouri?
2. What have been the two greatest aids to Missouri agriculture?
3. What was the economic position of the farm prior to 1840?
4. What were the obstacles in pioneer days to the extensive development of agriculture?
5. Describe the transition period between 1840 and 1860.
6. How do you explain the rapid growth in agriculture from 1860 to 1890?
7. When was the greatest agriculture depression?
8. What were the characteristics of the period of great prosperity from 1901 to 1920?
9. What educational agencies have improved farming in Missouri?
10. What have been some of the results of better farming?
11. Contrast farming in Missouri in 1850 with farming in 1920, as to the value of all farm property; the size of the average farm; the value of machinery on the farm; and the value of the land and buildings on the average farm.

## CHAPTER IV

### A CENTURY OF MINING IN MISSOURI

#### LEAD

Missouri's first industry was mining. Lead has been mined in Missouri for 200 years, coal and iron for 100 years, and zinc for over 50 years. These four minerals are only a part of Missouri's vast mineral products, which include such a wide field as clay and sand, rock and marble, nickel and copper, cobalt and barytes, and even silver. Missouri is a mineral state of first rank and has few rivals in the diversity of her mineral products. Missouri's mineral wealth was known to some extent a century ago, and in fact Missouri's lead was being mined even two centuries ago. The early explorers noted the southeast Missouri lead fields and these fields soon attracted Missouri's first settlers. Around the lead mines settlements grew and commerce developed. Lead played an important part in the settlement and development of Missouri. Later other Missouri minerals contributed their share, until to-day mining ranks as one of the great industries of the commonwealth.

The history of the lead industry in Missouri covers more than two centuries. The first important mines were opened about 1725 by two Frenchmen, Renault and La Motte, who came to find silver and stayed to mine lead. The early mines were in what are to-day Madison, St. Francois, and Washington counties. These counties combined with Franklin, Howell, Jefferson, and Crawford, still produce nearly 75% of Missouri's lead. This is called the southeast Missouri lead field. It lies south and west of St. Louis and is 80 miles wide and 85 miles long. It is one of the greatest lead fields in the world. There were settlements in this district over a quarter of a century before St. Louis was found-



ed in 1764. Lead mining soon became an important industry in Missouri after Renault and La Motte opened the south-east field. Lead became an article of commerce, could be readily sold, and was used to pay debts. In fact it took the



OLD TIME METHOD OF MINING LEAD AND ZINC ORE WITH A HORSE HOISTER

place of money just as furs did. Lead was mined by miners, farmers, and even Indians. It was as necessary as powder to the pioneer, trapper, and soldier. Missouri lead was used throughout the Mississippi valley, it was shipped to New Orleans, and it was used even in Europe. Missouri lead was used in the Revolutionary War and Missouri lead helped win the battle of New Orleans in the War of 1812. It added wealth to Missouri, helped develop such cities as Ste. Genevieve, St. Louis, and Potosi, and aided in bringing settlers to the pioneer Territory and State.

The early methods of lead mining and smelting were crude. However, the industry was profitable since the ore

was close to the surface, was very rich, and was easily reduced, or smelted. Improvements began with the coming of the Americans. Moses Austin, one of the early American settlers and mine owners, introduced a new type of furnace, the first of its kind in America, which greatly increased the profits of lead mining. He also sunk the first regular mining shaft in Missouri. This was in 1789. From that year lead mining became more and more important. By 1804 ten important lead mine districts had been opened in the southeast Missouri field and the annual production was  $\frac{3}{4}$  million pounds (375 tons) valued at \$40,000.

Other lead fields were later opened. In fact, lead has been found in nearly every county in central and southern Missouri. The central Missouri lead field, lying south and west of Jefferson City, was added. This field is 75 by 85 miles in size. The southwest Missouri lead field in the southwestern corner of the States, which was opened about 1850, has an area of 125 by 75 miles. However, the large bulk of Missouri's lead still comes from the old southeast district.

Although the pioneer lead mining was important, it was very small in volume compared with the product of to-day. The commercial production of lead in large quantities began about 1870. This year marked the beginning of the modern period of Missouri lead mining. From 1870 to 1889 the annual production was 29,000 tons. From 1889 to 1903 it rose to 72,000 tons, and in 1917, due to the demand and high prices of the World War, it increased to 345,000 tons, which had a value, before smelting, of \$34,000,000. More lead ore was produced in Missouri during 1916, 1917, and 1918 than was produced in the first 169 years of lead mining in Missouri (1720-1889), and its value during the three years was one-third more than its total value during the 169 years. The total value down to 1889 was \$60,000,000. and down to 1903 it was \$111,000,000. The normal annual production is

about 250,000 tons, valued at about \$10,000,000. The southeast and central districts produce nearly 90% of the lead mined in Missouri. The total investment of capital in the lead industry in Missouri is very large. The methods of mining and smelting are as different from those of pioneer days as is the total production. One of the Missouri lead companies, at Flat River and Bonne Terre in St. Francois county, is said to be the largest lead-ore producing company in the world. Millions of dollars are now invested in deep sunken shafts, modern equipment and machinery, huge smelters and railroads. Missouri to-day, as she has for years, stands first in lead, producing nearly one-third of the lead ore mined in the United States.

#### ZINC

Of Missouri's three most important metals—lead, zinc, and iron—zinc was the last to be produced. Although lead was the first ore mined in Missouri and still ranks first in value, zinc to-day is a good second. The ores of lead and zinc are usually found together but the southeast Missouri lead field does not produce zinc in commercial quantities. The great zinc district of the United States is the famous Joplin zinc belt which includes a number of counties in southwest Missouri, southeast Kansas, and northeast Oklahoma. The richest part of this district is in Missouri, especially in Jasper, Newton, and Lawrence counties. Twenty years ago Missouri alone furnished 80% of the zinc produced in the United States, but owing to the opening of new fields in other states, Missouri now produces from 20% to 25%. However, Missouri still ranks first in zinc.

The story of zinc mining in Missouri is as interesting as the story of gold mining in California. The first zinc smelter was erected at Potosi in 1867 but it was not until the "discovery" of zinc in southwest Missouri about 1870 that Missouri zinc became important and drew thousands of per-

sons from over the nation. The strange part of the story of Missouri zinc lies in the fact that for years zinc ore had been mined in the lead mines of southwest Missouri and had been thrown away. The miners, who had mined lead there since 1850, called the zinc ore "jack" and "black jack." It greatly bothered them in separating the lead. Around these lead mines large piles of this "black jack" were heaped, nobody dreaming that more wealth lay in the cast-off heaps than in the lead ore which had been obtained. About 1866 a mining expert for one of the lead companies became interested in this "black jack." After several years of work and experimenting he succeeded in properly smelting or separating it and obtained zinc. The news of the rich zinc field in Missouri was soon known and a "zinc rush" began pouring in that resembled a western "gold rush." The worthless "black jack" now became immensely valuable and besides there remained the almost inexhaustible zinc fields which had not been touched. By 1873, the output of Missouri zinc ore was 960 tons valued at \$8,640. Both the output and the value rose steadily. In 1916, owing to the demands of war and high prices, Missouri produced 304,070 tons of zinc ore, which had a value of \$24,228,596. The normal production is about 250,000 tons and the normal annual value is about \$10,000,000. Just as lead has influenced the history of Missourians in southeast Missouri, so has zinc in southwest Missouri. It has peopled counties, built cities, stimulated commerce, and greatly increased Missouri's wealth. Missouri is indeed fortunate in possessing what is perhaps the richest zinc field in the world.

### IRON

Missouri was the first state west of Ohio to produce and smelt iron ore. Missouri is rich in iron ores, and the discovery of iron deposits by the pioneers over a century ago was an important factor in the development of the

southern part of the State. There is scarcely a county in the Ozark region which does not contain iron ore. Nearly half of the counties of the State have important iron ore deposits. Much of this ore is of excellent quality and compares favorably with that used in other states.

Iron was the second metal mined in Missouri. In 1815 the first iron furnace was erected in the State near Ironton. Here the ore near Pilot Knob was used. The Pilot Knob ore, which is of fine quality, was first mined in 1825. The great iron deposits of Iron Mountain were mined in 1844 and for the next third of a century produced nearly 200,000 tons of pig iron. Down to 1887 the iron production of Missouri gradually increased until in that year Missouri produced 430,000 tons of iron ore. From 1887 to 1900 the production decreased, but in 1900 the iron industry again revived. Since 1900 the iron industry has grown as new deposits were found and as prices rose, and has fallen as old deposits proved unprofitable and as prices fell. Down to 1903, which covers the period of greatest growth and development, Missouri had produced between eight and nine million tons of ore, valued at \$35,000,000. Missouri's largest output was previous to the decline in production at the Iron Mountain and Pilot Knob mines. In 1918 the iron production of Missouri was 71,968 long tons with a mine worth of \$270,337, but the iron ore smelted in Missouri in 1918 was valued at \$3,082,136. Although compared with the great iron year of 1887 the present production of iron is small, this does not indicate that the iron industry in Missouri will continue to decline. In fact, it is not improbable that Missouri will again regain her position as an important producer of iron ore and it is almost certain that she will become an important iron smelting state. Missouri has vast iron deposits which some day will be worked. Missouri has vast coal deposits and lies next to the Illinois coal beds. Moreover, if the Mississippi river is ever utilized, as it could be with

proper channel development, to bring the rich iron ores from Minnesota, Missouri will become one of the centers of the iron industry of the United States. The day may be not far distant when Missouri will claim high rank as an iron state just as she does as a lead and zinc state.

#### BARYTES, COPPER, NICKEL, AND SILVER

Missouri produces a large variety of metals, all of which are important but many of which are not widely known to the public. The deposits of nickel, which is one of the iron group of metals, in Missouri are the largest in the United States. These deposits are principally in Madison county. Production of Missouri nickel began about 1850 and by 1898 had risen to 2,000 tons a year. Mine La Motte, near Fredericktown, has produced more nickel and cobalt than all the other states in the United States. No nickel ore has been mined in Missouri in recent years, yet in 1915 Missouri produced 822 tons of nickel as a by-product in refining copper.

Copper is also produced in Missouri. The richest field is in Madison county. In 1918 Missouri produced 577,665 pounds of copper, valued at \$142,683. Silver is produced in Missouri as a by-product of lead mining. In 1916 Missouri produced 129,450 ounces of silver valued at \$85,178. Down to 1915 Missouri ranked first in the production of barytes, and now ranks second. Barytes are used in the manufacture of paints. The baryte production of Missouri has increased rapidly. In 1914 Missouri produced three-fifths of the barytes in the United States. In 1917 the production rose to 59,046 tons valued at \$391,363. The principal field is in Washington county. Missouri also ranks high in the production of tripoli, a mineral found in southwest Missouri which is used as a polishing power. Many other minerals and metals might be mentioned but these are sufficient to indicate the remarkable wealth of Missouri in this field.

## COAL

Missouri is one of the greatest coal states in the country. Her coal fields underlie 24,000 square miles or over one-third of the State. Half of Missouri's counties have coal. Missouri's coal supply, still unmined, is nearly 84 billion tons, or enough to last 17,000 years at the present rate of production. Even if Missouri produced all the coal it uses, instead of only 40% as at present, Missouri has enough coal to last 5,800 years. However, it is probable that Missouri will not only produce all the coal used in the State but eventually will supply coal in large quantities to other states, unless some cheaper fuel or source of heat and energy is discovered. Certainly Missouri's coal is one of her greatest natural assets and will continue to become more and more important as a source of wealth.

Although the presence of coal in Missouri was known as early as 1804, possibly earlier, there was little development for decades. Even as late as 1840 Missouri produced annually only about 10,000 tons. By 1850 this had increased to 100,000 tons and in 1876 to 1,008,000 tons. In 1885 the production reached 3,080,000 tons and in 1903 it rose to 4,238,586. During the World War production was again stimulated, owing to demand and prices, and during each of the years 1917, 1918, and 1919, the production passed the 5 million ton mark. From 1840 to 1919 Missouri produced a total of 148,000,000 tons, valued wholesale at \$272,000,000. The average annual production is between 4 and 5 million tons and the average value is about \$10,000,000. Missouri produces bituminous and cannel coal. The bituminous coal, which is the more important, lies in six large producing fields: (1) the Bevier field occupying part of Boone, Chariton, Howard, Macon, and Randolph; (2) the Lexington field in Clay, Lafayette, and Ray; (3) the Southwestern field in Barton, Bates, Henry, and adjacent counties; (4)

the Novinger field in Adair; (5) the Marceline field in Linn; and (6) the Mendota field in northwestern Adair, Putnam, and Schuyler. The cannel coal, which is deposited in pockets of limited area, is found in thirty-five counties. The principal cannel coal counties lie to the south and west of the main coal fields. These counties are Bates, Cole, Cooper, Henry, Miller, and Morgan. The cannel coal beds are remarkable for their depth or thickness, ranging from 10 to 75 feet. One cannel coal deposit in Missouri is 90 feet thick. In 1919 the six largest coal producing counties were, in the order named, Lafayette, Barton, Adair, Macon, Randolph, and Ray. Other producing counties of size were Henry, Linn, Vernon, and Bates. The first six counties produced from 80% to 90% of Missouri's total coal production.

#### STONE AND CLAY PRODUCTS

Although the value of the annual production of Missouri lead, zinc, and coal is high, averaging about \$10,000,000. for each, still the value of Missouri's stone and clay products each year is higher than any one of these three in normal peace years. Missouri is again fortunate in her almost unlimited wealth of stone and clays, as well as gravel and sand. The value of Missouri's gravel and sand alone in 1916 was nearly one million dollars and her stone production that year was worth over one and a quarter million dollars. In 1914 the value of Missouri's building stone, lime (made from lime rock), clay products, and Portland cement (made from limestone and shales), was \$13,541,182. Of this amount the clay products, as clay fire brick, common brick, and sewer pipe, totaled over six million dollars, and the Portland cement totaled four and one-half million dollars. So, the importance of Missouri's stone and clay products is evident.

Missouri has almost every kind of building stone, ranging from common limestone rock and sandstone to granite and finest marble. This natural wealth has been a great



benefit to the State in furnishing building material for her own citizens and for the citizens of other states. Missouri ranks second in the Union in the production of limestone for building. Missouri's present state capitol building is built of Carthage stone, which is one of the most beautiful of fine building materials.

Missouri also ranks high as a producer of lime, which is made from lime rock. Most sections of the State abound in lime rock. The value of Missouri's lime production in 1917 was nearly one and a half million dollars. In the production of Portland cement, now so widely used in the erection of buildings, Missouri is one of the foremost states. Missouri has five large cement plants located in St. Louis, Jackson, Ralls, and Cape Girardeau counties. In 1916 the value of Missouri's Portland cement was over seven million dollars.

In valuable clays Missouri is equally fortunate. From her many kinds of clays are made such a variety of products as fire brick, common brick, sewer pipe, tile, and pottery. Large clay product factories are located in Audrain, Buchanan, St. Louis, Jackson, Henry, and other counties. The importance of this industry is growing faster than almost any other of the mineral industries of the State excepting perhaps that of manufacturing cement. In 1916 Missouri's clay products had a value of nearly seven and three-fourths million dollars. In the production of plate-glass Missouri is also advancing. Her excellent quality sands, from which glass is made, are found largely in Jefferson, St. Charles, and Franklin counties.

From this brief survey the increasing importance of Missouri's mineral wealth is apparent. Only a part of Missouri's minerals have been here set forth. For example, Missouri is one of the foremost states in mineral springs possessing health-giving qualities. Some of these are already widely known over the nation as those at Excelsior Springs

in Clay county. Although mining and salt-making were Missouri's first industries, the mineral industries of Missouri are still among the foremost in the State. The records show that although these industries have played an important part in the history of Missouri, they promise to play a part equally as important, perhaps more important, in the future. To aid the mining and mineral industry of Missouri, the State has established a state geological survey and a school of mines and metallurgy at Rolla, Missouri.

### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. Justify the statement, "Missouri is a mineral state of first rank."
2. Name the three most important metals found in Missouri and locate the field where each is mined.
3. What was the importance of lead mining in pioneer days?
4. Why did lead mining not become a profitable commercial industry on a large scale before 1870?
5. The annual lead production of Missouri is what part of the total production of the United States?
6. Missouri produces what per cent of the zinc of the United States and this places her in what rank?
7. What was the cause of the "zinc rush" to Missouri?
8. How have the great zinc fields influenced the history of southwest Missouri?
9. What is the extent of the iron ore deposits in Missouri?
10. When and where was iron ore first mined?
11. What are the possibilities of Missouri becoming one of the centers of the iron industry?
12. What are some of the metals mined in Missouri which are not widely known to the public?
13. How extensive are the coal fields of Missouri?
14. Compare the output of coal in 1840 with that of 1919.
15. Describe the two kinds of coal beds found in this state.
16. What is the value of Missouri's clay and stone products?
17. How has this natural resource benefited the State?

## CHAPTER V.

### A CENTURY OF TRANSPORTATION

One of the most important factors in the progress of a state or nation is transportation. Upon transportation facilities depend commerce and wealth, the comforts and necessities of life, and even the widespread intelligence of the people. In fact, the development of a people depends more largely on their transportation facilities than on any other factor excepting character and natural resources. This is especially true in a large country like the United States. Without adequate transportation, our cities would decline, factories close, mines stop producing, and farms become unprofitable as money making concerns. Even worse than these results, would be the calamity of lessened intercourse between our people, the decline in general information, and even the probability of overproduction of food in one section and of famine in another section. To-day, the United States is dependent on its transportation industry. Travel, freight, and mail are necessary in a modern state. These depend on transportation.

#### THE STEAMBOAT

Transportation of persons and goods has until recently been confined to the water and the land. In pioneer Missouri the land and water transportation facilities were primitive. These have already been described as regards the movement of passengers and freight both in Missouri and to and from Missouri. The two-wheeled "barefooted" cart of the Frenchman, the four-wheeled wagon and prairie schooner, and the pack train, were the reliance on land of the Missouri pioneer settler and the Missouri western trader. The various kinds

of boats and barges, all propelled by hand, were the reliance on water until the coming of the steamboat.

The steamboat revolutionized water transportation. The first one, the "Zebulon M. Pike", landed at St. Louis in 1817. In 1819 the "Independence" first navigated the Mis-



EARLY STEAMBOAT TRANSPORTATION ON THE MISSOURI RIVER

souri river from St. Louis to Franklin and Chariton and made the round trip in twenty-one days. Flat boats were still used after this for carrying grain, ores, and bulky articles, but the steamboat gradually displaced the other river crafts.

The steamboat had a wonderful influence on the development of Missouri. The river towns and counties increased rapidly in wealth and population. The Mississippi and the Missouri river became great arteries of commerce. From 1830 to 1860 the traffic grew larger and larger. The climax of this traffic was reached between 1850 and 1860 owing to the large emigration westward. By 1850 the steamboat annual arrivals at St. Louis totaled 2,899. Regular schedules were observed by the steamboats. The coming of

the railroads in the '50s and '60s brought competition which gradually ruined the river traffic. In the '70s it had ceased to be very important and in the '80s it had practically ceased to exist as a transportation factor.

However, it managed to survive and in 1912 a revival of interest in river transportation began in Kansas City and St. Louis. Public spirited citizens in these cities gave time and money to arouse the co-operation of the public. Congress was appealed to and the national government promised to spend money to improve the channel of the Mississippi and the Missouri. If the channels are made permanent, and they can be if adequate improvements are made, Missouri will again have the benefits of the low freight rates obtainable through river transportation. Already barge lines are operating at a profit to owners and customers between St. Louis and New Orleans, and some headway has been made in this direction between Kansas City and St. Louis. River traffic has a very important place in Missouri's freight transportation system to-day if only our people will awaken to its advantages. Missouri has two great rivers which, if properly controlled, can be made to serve man.

Although river transportation performed a great service to Missouri, it had many defects. It could serve only a limited area of the State. Again, it was operative only during the open seasons when the rivers were clear of ice. Finally, it was very hazardous both for the owners and the patrons. The history of the steamboat traffic on the Missouri is one filled with wrecks due to snags, sandbars, and explosions. The loss in life and property was great. Some of these defects are inherent, but others, such as snags, sandbars, and changing channels, can be removed.

#### THE RAILROAD

Although the steamboat for years solved the problem of water transportation, it was soon recognized that little

progress was being made in solving the problem of land transportation. The forest and prairie trails gave place to interior roads and by 1819 Missouri had fifteen mail routes. The American brought the post-roads and a regular mail service. But these roads were never satisfactory and in certain seasons were almost impassable. This condition was a hardship to the pioneer settler and a restriction on the development of the State.

During the thirties and forties hundreds of railroads were chartered over the Nation. The states gave them credit and financial aid. Most of them failed and left the states to pay very large debts. Missouri needed and wanted railroads, but she was conservative and at first refused to offer her credit and money to have them built. In 1836 a railroad convention was held in St. Louis. Several lines or routes were endorsed. A number of railroads were granted charters by the Legislature but no money was given. None of these railroads was built. Ten years passed and the people kept demanding railroads. Another railroad convention, a larger and more important one than before, was held in St. Louis in 1849. The purpose was to decide on a route or routes to the Pacific. Of course, Missouri hoped that such a line would cross Missouri. Senator Benton had heretofore opposed government aid for railroads, and no transcontinental road could be built without such aid. However, at this convention Benton made a great speech in favor of such a road in which, pointing to the west, he said: "There lies the East, there lies the road to India". This is the most quoted speech of Benton's.

Two years before (1847) Missouri had chartered the Hannibal and St. Joseph railroad. In 1849 the Pacific railroad and in 1851 the North Missouri, now the Wabash, were chartered. Others followed fast for the people were demanding railroads. In 1849 the State was out of debt and prosperous. In 1851 the State granted financial aid to help build

railroads and the National Government gave them land. Once begun there was no stopping. The roads were finally built, although slowly. When settlement was made in the '60s it was found that the State of Missouri had lost nearly \$25,000,000. through financial aid or credit. The first railroad actually begun was the Pacific, later the Mis-



FIRST LOCOMOTIVE RUN WEST OF THE MISSISSIPPI RIVER, ON THE PACIFIC RAILROAD, FROM ST. LOUIS TO JEFFERSON CITY

souri Pacific, and the first one finished was the Hannibal and St. Joseph.

The first locomotive west of the Mississippi was run on the Pacific railroad out of St. Louis in 1852. At that time Missouri had only five miles of railroad. Progress in railroad building was slow since the cost of construction proved to be much higher than had been estimated. The State lent her credit in large amounts. Congress made liberal grants of public land to the roads. Despite these aids Missouri had only 817 miles of railroad by 1860. The Pacific and the Hannibal and St. Joseph road had made great progress, the latter being the first to cross the State. By 1860 all the roads except the Hannibal and St. Joseph railroad had defaulted payment on their bonds. The Civil War made matters worse. Construction practically

stopped and property, equipment, and bridges were destroyed along many lines. However, by 1865 trains were running from Kansas City to St. Louis over the Pacific and from St. Joseph to Hannibal over the Hannibal and St. Joseph. Between 1866 and 1868 the State foreclosed her mortgages and sold the roads. Construction now began in earnest and by 1870 Missouri had 2,000 miles of railroad. St. Louis had become an important railroad center with rail connection with the north, east, south, and west. In 1869 the Burlington bridge across the Missouri river, the first to span that river, was completed at Kansas City, in 1871 the Wabash bridge at St. Charles was completed, and in 1874 the famous Eads bridge across the Mississippi river at St. Louis was finished. Kansas City now became an important rail center.

From 1870 to 1880 the rail mileage nearly doubled and it continued to increase rapidly down to 1900. To-day Missouri has over 8,500 miles of railroad and ranks eighth in this respect in the United States. In 1918 every Missouri county except three had at least one railroad. The following table shows the railroad mileage in Missouri for different periods:

1852.....	5 miles	1880.....	3,965
1854.....	38 "	1890.....	6,142
1855.....	139 "	1900.....	6,887
1860.....	817 "	1904.....	7,000
1870.....	2,000 "	1914.....	8,138
		1918.....	8,529

The two greatest rail centers in Missouri are St. Louis and Kansas City. Each has a fine union station. Twenty-six railroads enter the union station in St. Louis and over one-half as many enter the Kansas City union station. The remarkable transportation facilities afforded these two cities have been the principal cause of their commanding position in commerce and population. This is also true of the other large cities in Missouri. In fact, although Missouri lost



much money by lending her credit in the building of railroads, she was more than repaid in the development of the State through the final construction of these roads. Not so fortunate, however, were the many counties in Missouri which issued bonds in the '60s and '70s for constructing railroads, many of which were never built.

The story of the railroads would not be complete without a statement regarding their regulation by the State. In the early days of the railroads they adopted practices which helped some shippers and ruined others. They did this by means of different rates and by rebates. Regulation by law was begun in Missouri in the '80s to stop these practices. Since the railroads had been in the wrong in the past, the people after correcting the abuses went farther and in 1905 they lowered the rates to a point which prevented many of the roads from earning an income and some from paying expenses. The result was that a number of important roads were forced into bankruptcy, their equipment was impaired, and their service became less efficient. Other states also did this and the railroad facilities of the nation were impaired. Missouri realized this and was one of the few states to grant an increase in rates. The increase did not come in time, however, to save some of the roads from bankruptcy. In 1913 the Public Service Commission law of Missouri was passed, which placed the railroads largely under the general regulation of an expert public service commission appointed by the governor of Missouri. Despite this change, which was for the better compared with the old system, the railroads continued to deteriorate largely through lack of adequate rates. After the United States entered the World War the National Government took control of the railroads in 1917. After the return to private ownership the powers of the National Government continued to increase as regards regulation. To-day the rates for freight and pas-

senger traffic are practically set by the Interstate Commerce Commission both as regards interstate and intrastate business.

#### STREET AND ROAD TRANSPORTATION

The street railway was introduced in Kansas City and St. Louis by 1875 and later in other Missouri cities. It was at first another form of evolution of the old stage coach. The first cars were built with stage coach bodies, mounted on flanged wheels, running on flat iron rails, with horses as motive power. In the latter '70s the horses were discarded and the cars were pulled by a cable. About 1895 this gave place to electricity. Accompanying this progress were improvements in the cars until to-day one may ride with convenience in all seasons from his suburban home to his place of work in the city.

Another form of rail transportation similar to the street railway is the interurban line, also run by electricity. Missouri has a number of these lines close to the large cities and in southwest Missouri, but the great development in this field over the State at large is still in the future. As Missouri increases in population interurban lines will become necessary unless the automobile traffic develops so as to be dependable in all seasons.

During the last ten years much progress has been made in arousing interest in public good road building. However, Missouri has not until recently begun to make the progress necessary to furnish good roads to her people throughout the year. In 1920 the people voted to issue \$60,000,000 of road bonds. In 1921 the Legislature passed a large number of laws relating to the expenditure of this money for the building of good roads. A state highway commission of four men was created which body has general supervision over the construction of roads built with State money. The Federal Government is also making road appropriations to supplement the State money. Missouri in 1920-1921 took the first

step forward in planning the construction of durable public roads.

Perhaps one of the most important causes of the awakened interest in good roads is the automobile. The automobile traffic in Missouri for pleasure and business is tremendous. This traffic to be efficient demands good roads. The number of licensed cars in Missouri is increasing each year. The new \$60,000,000 road bond issued will probably be paid largely, perhaps entirely, from the license fees paid by automobile owners. The next step in transportation is to improve the facilities already provided by man and nature. The aeroplane will also develop as a swift means of locomotion, but the main reliance of Missouri and Missourians for at least the immediate future is to build on the firm foundations of the past.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. What influence had the steamboat on the development of Missouri?
2. What caused river traffic to decline?
3. What is necessary to revive river traffic and why is water transportation important?
4. Name the first two cross-state railroads in Missouri.
5. How did the State encourage the building of railroads?
6. Since what date has there been the greatest increase in railroad mileage?
7. What has been the attitude of the State in railroad regulation?
8. What was the recent legislation in regard to good road building?

## CHAPTER VI

### A CENTURY OF CITY BUILDING

During the last fifty years there has been in all countries a remarkable growth in the number and in the population of cities. The main causes of this growth have been greater transportation facilities by land and water and the building of modern factories. The transportation facilities have made the cities great trading centers, and those places which were located on the important trade routes grew fastest. The modern factories employing thousands of men and producing millions of dollars worth of manufactured goods added population and wealth to the cities, and those places again grew fastest which had the best transportation means to distribute their goods, and which were close to the areas producing the raw materials used in the factories. So, fundamentally, large cities are founded on trade, transportation, and factories, i. e., on economic factors. This is true of four of Missouri's five largest cities, St. Louis, Kansas City, St. Joseph, and Springfield—each having a population over 25,000; the fifth city, Joplin, has been founded largely on the mining industry, but this is not an exception, since modern mining is not unlike modern manufacturing. Economic factors have been very important in building nearly all of Missouri's 63 cities having a population over 2,500. The exceptions are those cities which have no factories but which have good railroads and cities with colleges and state institutions. A college town is an educational-factory center and must have transportation facilities. As a conclusion, it is clear that those cities will grow fastest which are on trade routes, which have the best transportation facilities, or which through their location are best adapted to manufacture goods or produce mineral products at the lowest cost.

## MISSOURI CITIES

Missouri has 63 cities, each of 2,500 inhabitants or more. These 63 cities have a population of 1,586,903, or 46.6% of Missouri's total population. This shows that cities are becoming important in Missouri. But most of these cities are small and there are only five which have over 25,000 inhabitants. Still, these five cities—St. Louis, Kansas City, St. Joseph, Springfield, and Joplin—have 79% of the population in all 63 cities. Moreover, there are only eight cities in Missouri having a population between 10,000 and 25,000—Cape Girardeau, Carthage, Columbia, Hannibal, Independence, Jefferson City, Moberly, and Sedalia. This shows that although Missouri has a large urban population nearly equal to its rural population, four-fifths of this city population is in five cities and 85% is in thirteen cities. With very few exceptions it is the large cities which have grown fastest. This has been true in Missouri since 1840, although some of the 63 cities existed in 1840 and nearly all of them were in existence by 1870, fifty years ago. In other words nearly all of the 63 cities have had time to grow, but to-day only five have become big cities and only thirteen have a population over 10,000.

St. Louis has been Missouri's largest city for over a century. From 1820 to 1830 it grew very slowly, increasing from 4,598 to 5,852. It was not incorporated until 1823. By 1840 it had grown to 16,469. It was still not a large city but its position, its trade, and above all its increasing steamboat traffic promised to make it a great city. By 1850 St. Louis had increased to 77,860 and now ranked eighth among American cities. Its rapid growth continued and by 1860 it had a population of 160,773. Much of this growth was due to the foreign immigration of the Germans and the Irish. Despite the Civil War it increased to 310,864, by 1870. The steamboat transportation had now declined

and although St. Louis had obtained the first railroads the new transportation did not at first offset the loss of the old. By 1880 St. Louis had increased to only 350,518, but in 1890 it had again grown fast and had a population of 451,770. It had now become a great railroad center. Since that time the increase has been slow but steady. To-day St. Louis has a population of 772,897 and ranks sixth in the United States.

The first great business which St. Louis developed was the fur trade. Only five years after it had been founded St. Louis's fur trade was \$80,000. a year. In 1820 it was \$2,500,000. a year. Finally, it passed the billion-dollar mark. The second great asset of St. Louis was the steamboat, which brought trade from all directions. When the railroad displaced the steamboat, St. Louis soon became a great railroad center with lines extending everywhere. The third important asset was the coming of the factory. This developed an industrial district which is one of the largest in area in the United States. The fourth economic asset of St. Louis has been her great financial resources. St. Louis is wealthy and its great banking houses not only finance St. Louis business but the business of other cities and states. St. Louis is the only city in the United States with a Federal Reserve bank and a Federal Farm Loan bank. Of course, none of these could have made a great city had it not been for the remarkable geographical location of St. Louis, its nearness to raw materials, its wonderfully rich trade territory extending in all directions, and its enterprising citizens.

St. Louis has lived up to its position and opportunity as a great city. Its schools, churches, streets, parks, modern conveniences, homes, business houses, museums, botanical gardens, theatres, hotels, and public buildings are equal to those of other modern progressive cities. St. Louis is known over the United States for being a city of homes, for having one of the largest union railroad stations;

for having one of the finest botanical gardens in the world, for having large and beautiful parks, and for having successfully given the largest and best World's Fair, the Louisiana Purchase Exposition of 1904, ever held. It is also known for the high standard and excellence of its schools.



THE GREAT FIRE, ST. LOUIS, MAY 17, 1849  
(Courtesy Mo. Hist. Society)

St. Louis is also a music center. But among those things which have cast great credit on this city has been the comparative absence of the sordid slums usually found in large cities. St. Louis is known not as a city of slums but as a city of homes, churches, and schools.

Since 1870 Kansas City has been the second largest city in Missouri and to-day ranks 19th in the United States. It entered the small city class in 1860 with a population of 4,418. In 1920 it had grown to 324,410. These sixty years of great growth are very similar to the sixty years of growth of St. Louis from 1820 to 1880. In 1820 St. Louis entered the small city class with a population of 4,598 and in 1880 it had 350,519. Another similarity between St. Louis and Kansas City lies in both getting their start as trading centers,

then as steamboat ports, and later as railroad and factory centers. Each city is located almost on the boundary line of Missouri, and hence each city derives much of its trade from other states. Each has a neighboring city of nearly the same name in another state. St. Louis, Mo., has East St. Louis, in Illinois; Kansas City, Mo., has Kansas City, Kansas. Each has a Federal Reserve Bank. Both Missouri cities have lived up to their opportunities and both have successfully met and solved many of their great problems. St. Louis has met a great fire (1849), a cyclone, loss of steamboat transportation in the '70s, and the rise of a rival in Chicago. Kansas City has met the problem of getting railroads in the '60s, of getting back its population after the Civil War, of successfully out distancing its early rival, Leavenworth, Kansas, of making beautiful streets, boulevards, and parks out of steep hills and muddy gulleys, and of bravely going through and of finally conquering one of the worst real estate depressions (1887-1891) a city could possibly have. Kansas City is truly either a city of miracles or a city of remarkable courage and faith.

Unlike the founding of St. Louis, the early beginning of Kansas City did not show the careful planning of any man or the steady growth following the founding. Although explorers early visited the present site of Kansas City and although one or two French traders had settled at the mouth of the Kaw, or Kansas river, about 1800, the beginning of Kansas City is found in 1821 when Francois Chouteau, a Frenchman, established a trading post on the south bank of the Missouri river. The little post of 31 persons did a considerable business. Later it became known as Westport Landing. Westport itself was an inland town three miles south, and is now part of Kansas City. From Westport Landing and Westport grew Kansas City. Westport was laid off in 1833 by J. C. McCoy. Kansas City was first called "the town of Kansas" in 1847, in 1854 "the City of



Kansas", and in 1889 "Kansas City". The first agency to build up the town was the Santa Fe trade. The first large cargo from New Mexico reached Kansas City in 1845. By 1850 Kansas City was the exclusive eastern terminus of the freighting business and 600 wagons left annually for Santa Fe. Being the closest Missouri river point to Santa Fe, Kansas City soon crowded out rivals for the great trade of the Southwest. By 1860 the freight shipped from Kansas City was 16,500,000 pounds, employing 7,084 men, 6,147 mules, 27,920 yoke of oxen, and 3,033 wagons. As early as 1853 Missouri's great statesman, Thomas H. Benton, on a visit to Kansas City predicted that it would become a great commercial and manufacturing city. It grew rapidly in the latter '50s owing to the great steamboat traffic, the western freighting business, and the immigration of settlers to Kansas territory. Its small population of 478 in 1855 increased to 4,418 by 1860. During the war its population declined to 3,500 and its Santa Fe trade went to Leavenworth. In the latter '60s it obtained several important railroads, notably the Missouri Pacific running eastward and the Union Pacific westward, and by securing a bridge across the Missouri river, the first ever built, it obtained access to the north Missouri country through the Hannibal and St. Joseph railroad. Its destiny was now secure. By 1870 it had seven railroads and a population of 32,360. Leavenworth was no longer a real rival. Since then its remarkable growth is seen in these figures: 1880, 55,785; 1890, 132,716; 1900, 163,752; 1910, 248,381; 1920, 324,410.

To-day Kansas City is a modern city in every sense of that term. It is a great railroad and factory center. Its stockyards and packing houses in Kansas City, Kansas, are known over the nation. It has beautified its environment with parks and boulevards. Kansas City is known as one of the most beautiful park cities in the United States. It has no slums. It has one of the best and most beautiful

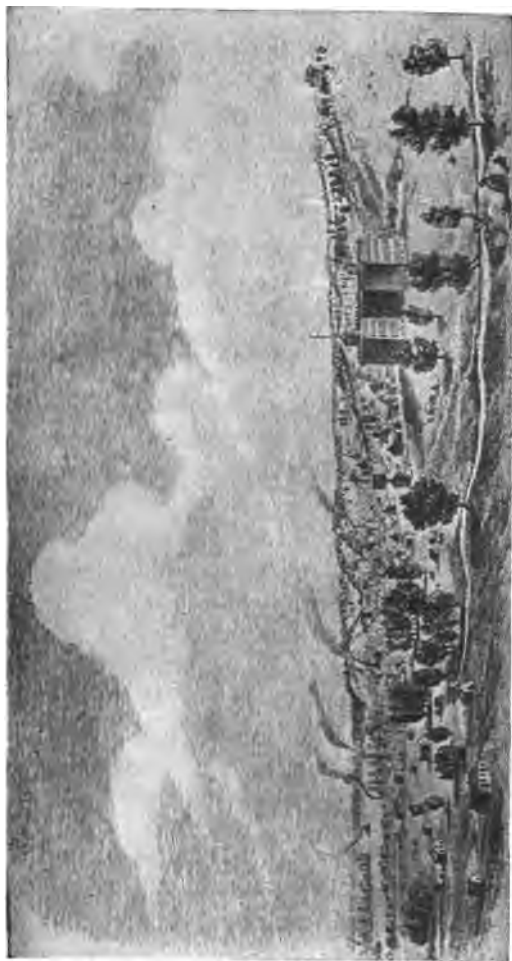


KANSAS CITY AT AN EARLY DAY

residence districts in the country. Its schools and churches are unsurpassed. Out of its high hills and cliffs it has made a fairy playground of unsurpassed scenic beauty for its citizens. Its union station, recently built, is widely known and its memorial building now under construction will be a monument both to Kansas City's heroes and to Kansas City's progressive citizens. It has well lived up to its motto: "Make Kansas City a good place to live in."

The building of St. Joseph, Missouri's third largest city, was similar to the founding of Kansas City. Both began as trading posts, founded by Frenchmen. Both became freighting centers and outfitting centers for the trade westward. Both were the eastern termini of western trades and trails. Both became great river ports and later railroad centers. Both obtained great factories and packing houses. Both became progressive cities. Although St. Joseph was younger it grew faster at first, but after 1870 Kansas City took the lead. Like Kansas City and St. Louis, the city of St. Joseph is located close to the Missouri boundary line.

On a trip up the Missouri river a St. Louis Frenchman noticed a river crossing at a place which the Indians called Blacksnake Hills. Here Joseph Robidoux established a trading house in 1827, from which grew the city of St. Joseph. It was ideally located geographically, being on a natural route east to west and being a good river port. Its trade at first was in furs and peltries. Soon settlers came and in 1843 the foundation of the city was laid. In 1851 it was incorporated. The town grew fast. The steamboats brought it supplies for the north Missouri country and the great trains of freighters and emigrants going west. It became the outfitting point for the West and Northwest. Caravans, stage coaches, and the pony express, brought it trade and news. With the coming of the railroad in 1859 it became the western terminus of the Hannibal and St. Joseph route. By 1860 it had a population of 8,932 and in 1870 this had increased



ST. JOSEPH AT AN EARLY DAY

to 19,565. Although the early transcontinental railroads passed either to the north or to the south, St. Joseph grew on account of its rich trading territory in Missouri, Iowa, and Kansas. By 1880 it had grown to 32,431 and by 1890 to 52,324. It was now a railroad center. Most Missouri cities, excepting Joplin which had opened new mines, did not grow fast between 1890 and 1900. Those were years of hard times and business depressions, and factories do not expand and cities rarely grow fast during business depressions. By 1910 St. Joseph had a population of 77,403 and its population in 1920 was 77,939.

St. Joseph is the great city of northwest Missouri. It is built on the most substantial bases of a rich trading territory, fine railroad transportation, and great factories. It is a wholesale and packing center. Considering its size it is one of the wealthiest cities in the country. Showing its progressiveness, it has built on these economic successes a fine system of schools, parks, and modern city improvements.

The fourth city of size in Missouri is Springfield, "The Queen of the Ozarks." Located at an altitude of 1,500 feet, on the Ozark plateau, Springfield is favored by nature in climate, water, resources, and scenery. It is an inland city but like the other Missouri cities it draws part of its trade from other states. Also like other Missouri cities it is located on trade routes and these have been developed through the railroads. Springfield is a railroad center and a factory center. It serves southwest Missouri.

Springfield was founded in 1833 by John P. Campbell, who had come from Tennessee. It grew slowly and by 1858 had a population of only 1,200. It was a strategic military point during the Civil War and this served to depress business. After 1865 business revived quickly. By 1870 it had a population of 5,555 and in 1890 it had 21,850. By 1910 it had increased to 35,201 and by 1920 to 39,631. Its slowest growth was between 1890 and 1900, the decade of depres-

sion. The development of the fruit, poultry, and mining industries in the Ozarks and in southwest Missouri, combined with the factories and railroads in Springfield have furnished the economic bases of the city. The rich Ozark soil of the prairies has built up a prosperous farming class which to-day gives Springfield an economic position as strategic as was its military position in the early '60s.

The fifth city of size in Missouri is Joplin, the great center of the richest zinc mining field in the world. This field extends from southwest Missouri to Kansas, Oklahoma, and Arkansas. Joplin is the acknowledged industrial and financial center of this region. Its railroad transportation is adequate. The business of Joplin was built on lead and zinc. Joplin grew from mining camps. The town was platted in 1871 and chartered in 1873. In 1880 it had a population of 7,038 and in 1890 it had 9,943. By 1900 it had increased to 26,023 and in 1920 its population was 29,902. Since its principal business is based on the lead and zinc industry, it grows tremendously when that industry flourishes, i. e., when the price of lead and zinc is so high as to profitably work the mines. The recent development of the southwest Missouri fruit industry is also becoming an important asset to Joplin.

#### CONCLUSION

Each Missouri city and town, large and small, has an interesting history, which is well worth studying. The citizens of each will be well repaid in learning that history. What has made the town, what has built it, what has it failed to do, what does it lack,—in short, what are its advantages and its limitations from an economic, educational, and convenience point of view? It is the quality of the town, not the size, and it is the progressive character of the citizens, not the figures on population, which make the city

worth while. The size depends largely on economic factors as transportation, factories, and trade territory; the character depends entirely on human factors as faith, courage, and progressiveness.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. What factors in general contribute to city building?
2. What are some of the advantages the city affords?
3. Why are cities important in the history of Missouri?
4. Trace the growth of St. Louis from 1820.
5. What four great advantages aided in the growth of St. Louis?
6. What are some of the things for which St. Louis is known?
7. In what way does the founding and growth of Kansas City resemble St. Louis? How does it differ?
8. What was the greatest agency in the early building of Kansas City?
9. How has Kansas City lived up to the motto, "Make Kansas City a good place to live in?"
10. How did the geographic location of St. Joseph contribute to its growth?
11. What economic factors have entered into the building of Springfield?
12. How does a great industry contribute to the prosperity of Joplin?

## CHAPTER VII

### A CENTURY OF JOURNALISM AND LITERATURE

Missouri ranks high in journalism and in literature. In each the State has made important contributions. Some of the Nation's great editors and authors were either born in Missouri or accomplished much of their work in Missouri. Among the eminent Missouri editors and reporters are such widely known men as Nathaniel Paschal, George Knapp, William Hyde, Carl Schurz, Joseph Pulitzer, Joseph B. McCullagh, William R. Nelson, John N. Edwards, Walter B. Stevens, William Marion Reedy, and Walter Williams. Among the eminent Missouri authors are such noted writers as Mark Twain, Eugene Field, Winston Churchill, Augustus Thomas, Sara Teasdale, and Fannie Hurst. Some of these are known to every well-informed Missourian and others have a reputation which is more than nation wide. Missouri has reason to be proud of her journalists and authors.

#### JOURNALISM IN MISSOURI

Journalism in Missouri is more than a century old. The first newspaper was established in St. Louis in 1808. This was the MISSOURI GAZETTE. Its founder and editor was a native born Irishman, Joseph Charless. For seven years this little four-page sheet was the only newspaper west of the Mississippi river. It became the MISSOURI REPUBLICAN and later the ST. LOUIS REPUBLIC. It suspended in 1919, after a long and valuable career of 111 years. St. Louis was also the home of Missouri's second newspaper, the WESTERN JOURNAL, founded in 1815. This paper finally became the ST. LOUIS ENQUIRER and for several years was largely controlled and edited by Missouri's great statesman, Thomas H. Benton. The third Missouri newspaper was the MISSOURI



INTELLIGENCER AND BOON'S LICK ADVERTISER, founded in 1819 by Nathaniel Patten and Benjamin Holliday at old Franklin, Howard county. Although this paper did not differ in size or character from the two St. Louis papers of that day, it is usually referred to as the first country newspaper in Missouri. Other pioneer newspapers established about this time were the MISSOURI HERALD at Jackson in 1819, the MISSOURIAN at St. Charles in 1820, the CORRESPONDENT AND RECORD at Ste. Genevieve in 1821, the MISSOURI GAZETTE at St. Charles in 1823, and the JEFFERSONIAN at Jefferson City in 1825. The number of newspapers in Missouri kept increasing until by 1850 each section of Missouri except the Ozark counties had several newspapers. The first newspaper in the Ozark region was the OZARK STANDARD, established at Springfield in 1838.

Naturally the early newspapers followed the trend of settlement. The first ones were on or near the Mississippi or the Missouri river. Later as population spread into the interior, the pioneer editor followed with his small wagon-load of equipment of type and press. By 1897 Missouri had 894 newspapers, not including trade journals, but in 1921 the number had fallen to 721. The latter included 73 dailies and 648 weeklies and semi-weeklies, and they were published in 424 places. The first daily newspaper in Missouri was the ST. LOUIS HERALD, which was published in 1834 but which was soon discontinued. The next daily, which continued publication, was the MISSOURI REPUBLICAN of St. Louis. In many ways the MISSOURI REPUBLICAN (first called the MISSOURI GAZETTE and later the ST. LOUIS REPUBLIC) was one of the greatest newspapers Missouri has produced. It was the first weekly, the first metropolitan newspaper, the first permanent daily, the first in adopting modern printing machinery, the first to use extensively the telegraph for news, and it had the longest life. St. Louis and Missouri owe much to the old MISSOURI REPUBLICAN.

Missouri journalism is divided into three periods. The first was the period of pioneer journalism and extended from 1808 to 1850. This period was characterized in general by two features, little mechanical equipment for printing newspapers and emphasis on ideas rather than on news in the newspaper itself. The early newspapers were small in size and contained only four pages (two sheets) to an issue. The early MISSOURI GAZETTE measured only twelve inches by eight inches. Gradually the size increased until in the '40s and '50s some of the Missouri newspapers measured thirty-one inches long by twenty-five inches wide. They were called "blanket-sheets." Both the type setting and the press work were done by hand. With the invention of modern printing machinery the size decreased and the number of pages increased.

The pioneer Missouri newspaper contained little news. It was an idea or a fact-paper rather than a "news" paper in the modern sense. It contained articles from other newspapers and magazines, chapters and poems from books, letters from subscribers (usually signed with a pen name), unattractive advertising in large quantity, and usually very interesting and instructive editorials. Foreign and national news was given as much, if not more, attention and space as state and local news. Owing to difficulty in obtaining paper and to delay of the mails, the pioneer Missouri newspaper was frequently irregular in its time of publication. The newspapers in St. Louis were naturally of a different type as the city grew in size. Here the news feature was first introduced, the first telegraph reports, the best machinery, and the first reporters. But even down to 1850 the Missouri newspaper differed greatly in many important features, especially in the news feature, from the newspaper of today. Still, it was during this pioneer period that the Missouri editor performed a great service to his community and his state. In the country he labored under great disadvantages, the

greatest of which was his small income. This frequently forced him to engage in some other occupation in order to make a living.

The second period of Missouri journalism was from 1850 to 1880. This period marked the awakening of Missouri journalism and the transition from the old to the new journalism. The first fifteen years of this period saw the wider use of the telegraph, a deeper interest in political questions, the development of news stories (especially during the Civil War), the continued use of the "blanket-sheet," and toward the close the suspension of a number of country papers owing to the war. The last fifteen years of this period witnessed the rise of real "news" papers, the great growth of the metropolitan press in St. Louis, Kansas City, St. Joseph, and other towns, the decrease in size and the increase in pages of the newspaper, the introduction of modern machinery in the city newspaper plants, and the development of the country press through the facilities of the mail, railroad, and telegraph. In 1867 the Missouri Press Association was organized in St. Louis. This event marked the beginning of co-operation among Missouri editors, which has done much to elevate the profession of journalism in Missouri.

The third period of Missouri journalism is the modern period, from 1880 to date. The same tendencies noticed in the last fifteen years of the second period now strengthened and broadened. Better machinery, the application of chemistry to such practical problems as "cut" or illustration work, and more adequate transportation facilities, made possible the modern city and country newspaper. As the newspaper improved, its circulation increased. The income of the editor rose, but more important was the development of the Missouri editor into a practical business man running his paper on a business basis. This latter alone did much to elevate journalism in Missouri. The old practice of paying

subscriptions (frequently in arrears) in produce, as corn, wood, or potatoes, has long since been abandoned. This period also marked the growth of the small city daily and the tendency to issue evening rather than morning dailies. In 1859 there were four morning daily papers in Missouri to one evening daily paper. In 1921 there were four evening dailies to one morning daily.

The last important feature of this period was the establishment of the school of journalism of the University of Missouri in 1907. Its founder was a native born Missouri editor, Walter Williams. This was the first school of journalism in the world. It opened in 1908 and has trained many men and women in preparation for a journalistic career. Instruction in journalism has since been introduced in other Missouri educational institutions.

The Missouri editor has performed a service to his state which is invaluable. This is true of the pioneer editor and the modern editor, of the country journalist and the city journalist. He has been a builder and a teacher. The great progress of St. Louis would not have been possible without such a paper as the old MISSOURI REPUBLICAN. To-day each Missouri city has from two to five daily newspapers, and every Missouri community is served by at least one local newspaper. It is true that we do not hear to-day of such outstanding Missouri editors as Joseph B. McCullagh, Joseph Pulitzer, or William R. Nelson, or of such remarkable reporters as John N. Edwards or Walter B. Stevens, but as a whole Missouri journalism to-day is higher, Missouri newspapers are better, and Missouri journalists are more adequately equipped for their work.

#### LITERATURE IN MISSOURI

Literature in Missouri, like journalism, is more than a century old. The first Missouri poem was written in 1780 by a St. Louis schoolmaster, John B. Trudeau. It was called

souri, but about twenty-five per cent were now claimed by other cities and towns. Another characteristic of this period was the appearance of women as authors although men were still in the majority.

Among the many writers of this period some of the most successful and most eminent were Mark Twain, Eugene Field, John N. Edwards, Adolph Ernest Kroeger, W. T. Harris, B. J. Snider, James W. Buel, Nathan C. Kouns, Frederick L. Billon, Mrs. Kate Chopin, and William Vincent Byars. The first two are known to every school boy and girl. Both were Missouri born and Missouri reared. Mark Twain—his real name was Samuel Langhorn Clemens—was born in Florida, Missouri, and was reared in Hannibal. He was Missouri's greatest man of letters and America's greatest humorist. He was more than a mere fun-maker and a writer of fiction, however, and was perhaps more deeply interested in the philosophy of life. Eugene Field was a



EUGENE FIELD

native of St. Louis, where he also was reared. He was a journalist and worked in St. Louis, Kansas City, St. Joseph, Denver, and Chicago. He was a poet of rank and his "Little Boy Blue" breathed a deep sympathy for child life. He ranks as Missouri's greatest children's poet. John N. Edwards was a journalist and did most of his work in Kansas City. He was a remarkably able re-

porter and writer. His field was semi-historical on subjects

relating to the Civil War. Adolph Ernest Kroeger was a native of the Duchy of Schleswig in Europe. He made his home in St. Louis where he achieved distinction as a scholar and writer on philosophy. W. T. Harris was also a St. Louisan by adoption. His writings an education and his great work for public education gave him a national reputation. He was one of the most learned scholars in the United States. Benton Jacques Snider, another St. Louisan by adoption, also had a national reputation in the field of philosophy and classic scholarship. James W. Buel was the most prolific author who ever lived in Missouri. Most of his works related to description and travel, biography and history. Nathan C. Kouns was a native of Fulton, Missouri, and later made his home in Kansas City and Jefferson City. He was a novelist of rank. Frederick L. Billon, another St. Louisan by adoption, was a historian whose works promise to live. Mrs. Kate Chopin, a native of St. Louis, was a painstaking author of rare ability. Her stories were among the finest produced in America on the subject of Creole life in the South.

The third, and present, period of literature in Missouri extends from 1900 to date. It is characterized by several features. In the first place, the authors are largely native born Missourians. Although St. Louis still maintains her literary ascendancy, other cities and towns are now producing more writers of ability than ever before. In the second place, the novel, the short story, and the poem predominate. This is largely a period of light literature where the imagination and the polished style of the author are in the ascendancy. Again, women divide honors with men as authors. On the whole, it is a period of greater literary activity than any previous period and it is well maintaining Missouri's rank as established by Missouri's greatest writers.

Among some of the foremost literary characters of this period are Winston Churchill, Augustus Thomas, Rupert

Hughes, Walter B. Stevens, Louis Houck, Fannie Hurst, Sara Teasdale, Homer Croy, J. Breckenridge Ellis, Louis Dodge, William Marion Reedy, Harris Merton Lyon, and Mary Alicia Owen. Winston Churchill is a native of St. Louis. He is Missouri's greatest historical novelist. Augustus Thomas is also a native of St. Louis and is Missouri's greatest dramatist. Rupert Hughes is a native of Lancaster, Missouri, and is one of Missouri's eminent short story writers, novelists, and dramatists. Walter B. Stevens, a St. Louisan by adoption, is Missouri's most popular and prolific historical writer. He is also one of Missouri's two greatest reporters. Louis Houck, of Cape Girardeau, is Missouri's most eminent historian of the early period down to 1821. Fannie Hurst, a native of St. Louis, is widely known for her short stories. Sara Teasdale, of St. Louis, shares with Eugene Field the honor of Missouri's foremost poet. Homer Croy, a native of Maryville, Missouri, is well known for his humorous writings and works of fiction. J. Breckenridge Ellis, of Plattsburg, Missouri, is one of Missouri's most widely known novelists. Louis Dodge, of St. Louis, is also a novelist of rank. William Marion Reedy, of St. Louis, did more through his magazine, the St. Louis MIRROR, to develop a new school of Missouri and Mid-West writers than any other person. His essays and editorial comments on varied subjects are classic in style and beauty. Harris Merton Lyon, of Kansas City, is perhaps Missouri's greatest short-story writer. Mary Alicia Owen, of St. Joseph, is Missouri's greatest authority and writer on folk-lore. Missouri has every reason to be proud of her century of literature. To-day the State stands high even in comparison with the best and the oldest of America's literary centers.

SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. What was the name of the first Missouri newspaper? When was it established? By what name was this paper known later?
2. Name two other early newspapers and the editor of each.
3. What characterized the first period of Missouri journalism?
4. What progress in journalism was made from 1850 to 1880?
5. What facilities have added to the rapid growth of the modern city and the country newspaper?
6. What was the first book of Missouri poems?
7. What characterized the first period of Missouri literature? Name two authors of this period.
8. In what sense was the period of Missouri literature from 1860 to 1900 the "Golden Age" of Missouri letters? Name four authors of this period, each prominent in a different phase of literature.
9. What features characterize Missouri literature from 1900 to date? Name five authors of this period, each prominent in a different field of literature.



## CHAPTER VIII

### A CENTURY OF EDUCATION

Education in Missouri, like journalism, is more than a century old. Its beginnings may be traced back into the Spanish-French period. Since that period in the 18th century to the modern period in the 20th century many changes have taken place, many educational problems have been solved, and many obstacles have been overcome. The private school, the church school, and the public school appeared and each made its contribution and performed its service to the people. The original idea of the settlers that the parents should educate their children still remains in Missouri, but in addition has been adopted the broader idea that the State should educate the children of to-day in order that it may have the progressive, enlightened citizens of to-morrow. Education is now free to all, and undoubtedly the greatest of Missouri's assets, greater even than her natural resources, is her schools, colleges, and universities.

#### ELEMENTARY EDUCATION

The first schools in Missouri were private schools. They appeared during the Spanish-French period and were conducted by the village priest and by the private schoolmaster. These schools were confined to the towns. From an early date St. Charles, Ste. Genevieve, and St. Louis had schools under the village priest, where elementary instruction was given and later instruction in the Latin, French, and Spanish languages. The first private boys' school in St. Louis was opened by John B. Trudeau (Jean Baptiste Trudeau). Trudeau was Missouri's first schoolmaster; he was also Missouri's first poet. He taught from 1774 to 1827, a period of over half a century. The first private

school for girls west of the Mississippi was established about 1790 by Mme. Rigauche. This also was a French school and was located in St. Louis. Here the elementary branches were taught as well as music, languages, and the "graces." In the private French schools tuition was charged.

The coming of the Americans after 1804 added other types of schools. The village priest schools and the private town schools of the French period continued, but now the Protestant ministers and the private American schoolmasters began giving elementary instruction in the towns and the interior settlements. Another addition, the most important, was the appearance of the district subscription school in the pioneer settlements. The families in a community employed the teacher and paid him according to the number of children sent by each family. Sometimes the community built a log schoolhouse and sometimes the children were taught at the home of the teacher. The first English district school in Missouri was opened by Benjamin Johnson on Sandy Creek, in what is now Jefferson county, in 1806. The district subscription school gradually spread over Missouri as the American settlers pushed into the interior. It was frequently founded even before the newspaper and the court house. Later it became the basis of the elementary public school and it continued for many years even after the free public school had appeared. Previous to the coming of the public school another type of school appeared in Missouri in which elementary instruction was frequently given as well as secondary education. This was the academy and the ladies' seminary. Since these latter were primarily secondary schools, i. e., similar to high schools, they will be considered under secondary education.

To-day elementary education in Missouri is given almost entirely in the public schools, i. e., tax-supported schools free to all persons between six and twenty years of age. The first movement in Missouri to establish a system of pub-

lic schools was made in St. Louis in 1817 but the first public school in St. Louis was not opened until 1838. The story of the public school system in the State is filled with interesting and instructive lessons. The development was slow, owing to several causes. In the first place, the private school, the academy, and the district subscription school, at least partially served the needs of elementary education, but of course this service was confined to those who were able to pay. Naturally, in those early days, many opposed school taxation for the benefit of educating the children of other citizens. Besides, some persons had no children and they also objected. In other words, although the people in general believed in education, they did not regard it as the duty of the State to undertake this expensive work, but they thought that it was the duty of the parents. In the second place, the public school in Missouri was at first frequently regarded as a school for the poor children and the orphans. For example, in Missouri's first state constitution (1820) was an excellent article on education in which was stated "One school or more shall be established in each township, as soon as practicable and necessary, where the poor shall be taught gratis." As a result of this attitude, many persons preferred to send their children to private schools. Naturally, these persons, who were influential leaders, were not so interested in the development of a public school system. Today, the public school is open to the poorest child and is good enough for the richest child. In the third place, much of the public school land donated to Missouri by the United States was sold early and therefore did not bring a good price. Moreover, the money received from this land was invested in stock of the State Bank and for years the income on the money was very small. Since this income was one of the main sources of support for the public schools, this resulted in delaying the growth of a public school system. Finally, the Civil War practically closed the public schools of

Missouri. As a result of these and other factors, the public school system in Missouri developed slowly and only after overcoming many obstacles.

The first general law for a public school system in Missouri was passed in 1835. The most important early law was the Geyer Act of 1839. The Geyer Act was the foundation of Missouri's present school system. It provided for the various state, county, and township school funds; a state superintendent of schools; the ages of the white school children (eight to sixteen years),—no provision was made for the education of negro children until the constitution of 1865; and a state university. The Geyer Act was a complete "paper system" of public education. It was virtually an adoption of Thomas Jefferson's famous and worthy plan for free public education for all the people from the elementary grades to the university. Unfortunately, the Geyer Act, as such, was never fully put into operation. In 1843 organized common schools were supported in forty-two of the seventy-seven counties. In 1854 out of 233,327 children of school age in the State, only 86,505 were in the public schools, the remainder being in private schools or not attending any school. During the '50s much progress was made but even in 1859 only one-half of the children attended the public school. The average teacher's salary for the year was \$121. The equipment was also poor, for in 1859 the total amount raised to build and repair public school houses was only \$192,423.

After the Civil War the people awakened to the need of better education. From that time the State advanced rapidly. Both the constitution of 1865 and that of 1875 emphasized public education for both white and negro children. For decades the State has appropriated one-third of the general revenue for the public schools in addition to the income from the state school fund. The school districts in town and country have voted larger and larger taxes for

schools. City schools, unsurpassed, appeared and great progress has lately been made in the rural schools by way of greater support and consolidation. This table taken from the report of the state superintendent of schools for 1921 will make clear the remarkable progress that has taken place in the public school system of Missouri during the last fifty years.

	1867	1920
Total value of schoolhouses.....	\$1,480,729	\$65,605,240
Total value of school equipment .....	58,075	6,120,465
Number of public schoolhouses		
(St. Louis excluded) .....	4,135	9,486
Number of log schoolhouses.....	2,274	Very few
Total amount paid for teachers' wage....	641,974	16,831,753
Number of teachers—public schools ....	6,262	21,126
Number of children—public schools.....	169,270	672,483
Average salary of teachers (male).....	\$38.60	\$95
Average salary of teachers (female)....	\$29.81	\$65
Average number of months taught per year	4.6	7 to 8
Number of school libraries in Missouri..	12	8,996

Equally instructive of Missouri's progress in education is the difference in the character of the course of study offered fifty years ago and of that offered to-day. The elementary education of that day was confined to a few subjects, as writing, reading, arithmetic, geography, history, and English grammar. To-day not only are these subjects taught more thoroughly but many other subjects of cultural and practical value have been added.

The State has not only improved the school system by giving it more adequate financial support but also by passing and enforcing laws regulating and raising the elementary public schools. The qualifications of teachers were raised through examinations, teachers' institutes, and better training in teachers' colleges. The attendance of pupils was increased by the compulsory attendance law of 1905. Special state aid was provided for weak districts. County supervision was

finally made effective by the law of 1909, which required each county to select a county superintendent and which also provided a state subsidy of \$400 to help his salary. The great need of teachers in elementary schools was also partially met by a law (1913) providing teacher-training in high schools. In 1913 the free textbook law and the state board convention law were passed. In 1921 a county unit law, making the county the unit of school administration for schools below a certain rank, was passed. This law was held up by the referendum. One of the greatest forces in promoting better schools and welding all the teachers together in an enthusiastic, progressive body, is the State Teachers' Association, which is the second largest in the United States.

The State has also maintained for years special schools. These schools are supported by the State and have performed a great service. The school for the deaf and dumb children is located at Fulton; the school for the blind, at St. Louis; the home for the feeble minded and the epileptic, at Marshall; and the school for the incorrigible boys, white girls, and negro girls, respectively, at Boonville, Chillicothe, and Tipton.

#### SECONDARY EDUCATION

The early secondary schools in Missouri were the academies and the ladies' seminaries. Both were tuition schools. The academy idea of education was found in nearly all parts of the country. The female seminary idea originated in the South. Some of the early academies chartered in Missouri were: Jackson, 1820, in Cape Girardeau county; St. Charles and Franklin, 1820; Louisiana, 1822; St. Marys, 1822; Potosi, 1824; Ste. Genevieve, 1824; Boonville, 1825; and Fayette, 1825. The academy spread rapidly over Missouri and by 1850 there were 204 academies in the State, in which were enrolled 8,000 students. A few of these academies became military schools. To-day the academies

have nearly passed away. Of the military academies three have survived; Kemper, at Boonville, Missouri Military, at Mexico, and Wentworth, at Lexington.

The female seminaries also had their beginning at the time of the academy. Many were church schools. The Sacred Heart academy at St. Louis was founded by the Catholics as early as 1818. Among the early seminaries were Elizabeth Aull, at Lexington, 1820; Lindenwood, at St. Charles, 1830; and Howard Payne, at Fayette, 1834. The female seminary idea also spread rapidly over Missouri. A number of them are now junior colleges of the State, i. e., half-way schools between the high school and the college and university. Some of the cities also have established junior colleges but these are a part of the public school system. In 1921 Missouri still had forty-four fully accredited academies and eighteen junior colleges.

The secondary schools in Missouri to-day are the high schools. They are all the development of the last fifty years of Missouri's public school system, excepting three high schools in St. Louis, St. Joseph, and Kansas City. The first high school in Missouri was opened in St. Louis in 1853 with 70 pupils. In 1921 St. Louis had six first class high schools with 12,268 pupils. The second high school in Missouri was opened in St. Joseph in 1866 and the third in Kansas City in 1867. Owing to various causes the growth of the high school idea in Missouri was slow. Perhaps the two main reasons were first the fact that the high schools had no legal status in any Missouri constitution and second the strength of the private schools, especially the academies, giving secondary instruction. Even as late as 1899 Missouri had only 27 four-year, 38 three-year, and 60 two-year high schools,—a total of 125 high schools of which one-half gave only two years work. In 1921 Missouri had 396 first class, 94 second class, 166 third class, and 64 unclassified high schools,—a total of 720 high schools of which over one-half

were first class high schools. In these 720 schools were enrolled 74,248 pupils, of which 68,011 were in first class high schools. Much of this progress was due to the law of 1903, which gave the high school a firm legal basis by providing for state inspection of high schools by the state superintendent of schools. This inspection has accomplished much in developing the high school spirit and in raising the standards. Moreover, the people now appreciate the great work being accomplished in their high schools. The cities and towns are continuously advancing and lately the progressive rural districts have solved the problem of secondary education by consolidations with town high schools or with other country districts. The future of the Missouri high school was never brighter than it is to-day.

Equally as important as the progress of the high school in numbers and enrollment, has been the improvement in its course of study. Prof. C. A. Phillips, of the Warrensburg state teachers college, has described this in these words: "The early academies and high schools were for such students only as expected to attend college. At the present time, however, the modern high school curriculum in the State makes provision for practically all sorts of people—teacher-training classes for those who would begin teaching, vocational agriculture, vocational home economics, the trades, all the sciences, histories, languages, and technical subjects. Indeed, a modern high school curriculum is the equivalent of the ordinary college curriculum of thirty or forty years ago, except for the languages demands made by those colleges."

#### HIGHER EDUCATION

Higher education in Missouri, or "the college and university era," had its beginnings in church schools. The first college was organized by the Catholics in St. Louis in 1819 and became St. Louis University in 1832. The Uni-



versity of Missouri, the head of the public school system of Missouri, was established at Columbia in 1839. Other institutions of college rank founded in Missouri were: Central College at Fayette, founded by the Methodists, 1844; William Jewell College at Liberty, founded by the Baptists, 1849; Westminster College at Fulton, Presbyterian, 1853; Washington University, St. Louis, founded in 1854 by a St. Louis merchant, Wayman Crow; Drury College at Springfield, Congregational, 1873; Park College at Parkville, Presbyterian, 1875; Tarkio College at Tarkio, 1883; and Missouri Valley College at Marshall, Presbyterian, 1888. These colleges, with the Central Wesleyan of Warrenton and the Missouri Wesleyan of Cameron, constitute the "College Union." The state normal schools, now called teachers colleges, were organized in 1870. The first two were established at Kirksville and Warrensburg. In 1873 a third school was founded at Cape Girardeau, and in 1905 two more were established—one at Springfield and one at Maryville. These five state teachers colleges are also part of the public school system. They were established primarily to train teachers. They now give a full four year college course and their enrollment is rapidly increasing. Down to 1920 these schools had enrolled more than 145,000 students. Education for the negroes of the State was first provided for with the establishment of Lincoln Institute at Jefferson City in 1866. In 1879 this institute was taken over by the State and in 1921 the Legislature changed its name to Lincoln University.

The two leading universities in Missouri are Washington University at St. Louis and the University of Missouri. The former was founded in 1854 by Wayman Crow, a St. Louis merchant. Through the public spirit of leading citizens of St. Louis this institution received large gifts in money and property until to-day it has an endowment fund running into the millions of dollars. Washington University is supported by the income from this fund and from tuition charged stu-

dents. It maintains a number of complete schools or colleges in which higher instruction is given in the arts and sciences, engineering, medicine, law, dentistry, business and commerce. It is one of the leading universities in the Middle West.

The University of Missouri at Columbia, the capstone of Missouri's public educational system, was founded by the State in 1839. The United States also gave Missouri public land for the establishment of such an institution. Although the first state university established west of the Mississippi river, the growth of the University of Missouri was slow. Not until 1867 did it receive from the State an appropriation for support. As Missouri awakened to the need of such an institution adequately equipped, the State began to support it more liberally. The University of Missouri is to-day one of the greatest universities of its kind in the United States. Its separate colleges provide professional education in agriculture, arts and science, law, education, engineering, journalism, commerce, and medicine. Another college of the University of Missouri is the school of mines and metallurgy located at Rolla, Missouri. The enrollment of the University of Missouri for 1921 was over 6,000 students.

#### SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. Who was Missouri's first schoolmaster?
2. What beginnings were made in elementary education during the Spanish-French period?
3. What changes in education took place with the coming of the Americans?
4. How did the district subscription school differ from the public school?
5. Why was the development of the public school system slow in Missouri?
6. Illustrate Missouri's progress in public education.

7. In what kind of schools did secondary education have its beginning in Missouri?
8. Indicate the progress made by the high school in Missouri during the last fifty years.
9. Describe the general progress of higher education in Missouri.

## APPENDIX

### Reference Books Desirable for a Small Working Library on Missouri History

(All of these works, excepting complete sets of back volumes of the publications of the State Historical Society of Missouri and of the Missouri Historical Society, can be secured for about \$25.00.)

CARR, LUCIEN, *Missouri, A Bone of Contention*. 1899. Houghton Mifflin Co. A brief general work on the history of Missouri. It is largely political in treatment and is not down to date.

HOUCK, LOUIS, *History of Missouri from Earliest Explorations and Settlements until the Admission of the State into the Union*. 3 vols., 1908. Donnelley and Sons, Chicago. The best work published on Missouri history down to 1821.

McELROY, JOHN, *Struggle for Missouri*. 1909. National Publishing Co. A presentation of the Civil War in Missouri.

MEIGS, WILLIAM, *Thomas Hart Benton*. Lippincott

*Missouri Historical Review*. State Historical Society of Missouri, Columbia. A quarterly magazine of over one hundred pages to the number. Subscription price \$1.00 a year. Complete set of 16 vols., bound, \$60.00. Contains valuable articles on every phase of Missouri history.

*Missouri Historical Society Collections*. Missouri Historical Society, St. Louis. Contains valuable studies on Missouri history.

SHOEMAKER, FLOYD C., *Missouri's Hall of Fame*. Missouri Book Company, Columbia. Devoted to the lives of eminent Missourians.

SHOEMAKER, FLOYD C., *Missouri's Struggle for Statehood, 1804-1821*. Floyd C. Shoemaker, Columbia. An intensive study of Missouri government from 1804 to 1821.

THWAITES, REUBEN G., *Daniel Boone*. Appletons.

VIOLETTE, E. M., *History of Missouri*. 1918. D. C. Heath & Co. An excellent treatment of those topics in Missouri history that have significance in the history of the nation.

WILLIAMS, WALTER, *The State of Missouri, An Autobiography*. May be obtained from The State Historical Society of Missouri, Columbia, at \$1.00. Contains valuable information on Missouri.

## INDEX

- Academies, 331-332  
 Acts of Congress. *See* Congress  
 Adams, H. M., 246  
 Admission of Missouri into the Union, 74-75  
 Agriculture in Missouri, during Spanish period, 50-53; 1820-1921, 272-282  
 Amendments to constitution. *See* Constitution  
 American Fur Co., 103-104, 109  
 American immigration to Missouri, 43-46, 77-82  
 American settlements in Missouri, 43-46, 77-82  
 Americans in Missouri, 23-27, 60  
 Anderson, Bill, 230-231  
 Ashley, William H., 72, 101-103, 114, 122  
 Astor, John Jacob, 103-104  
 Atchison, David R., 129-130, 133, 136, 138-140, 217  
 Aull, Elizabeth, Seminary, 332  
 Austin, Moses and Stephen, 45-46, 285  
 Automobiles in Missouri, 302  
 Arsenal, at Liberty, 153; at St. Louis, 154  
 Bank of the State of Missouri, 120  
 Banks in pioneer Missouri, 86  
 Baptists in Missouri, 92  
 Barton, David, 72, 74-75, 123  
 Barytes. *See* Mining  
 Batdorf, Edwin, 233  
 Bates, Edward, 72, 114, 122  
 Bates, Frederick 65 116-119  
 Battle of New Orleans, 87; Brazito, 214; Sacramento, 215; Boonville, 222; Carthage, 55; Wilson's Creek, 224; Lexington, 225; Pea Ridge, 227; Kirksville, 228; Independence, 228; Lone Jack, 228; Westport, 231  
 Becknell, William, 105  
 Bent, Governor, 216  
 Benton, Thomas Hart, 72, 74-75, 110, 114, 116, 128-136, 315, 320  
 Big Ozark spring, 15  
 "Big Shake," The, 79  
 Billon, Frederick L., 322-323  
 Bingham, G. C., 230  
 Black Hawk War, 119, 209  
 Blair, Frank P., 149-156, 169-170, 180-181  
 Bland, Richard P., 187-188, 193  
 Boats. *See* Steamboat  
 Boggs, Lilburn W., 116, 120-121  
 Bogy, Louis V., 181  
 Bonds. *See* Transportation, Soldiers Bonus, Pension for Blind, Roads  
 Booms, 84, 203-204. *See also* Agriculture  
 Boone, Daniel, 45-46  
 Boone's Lick country, 78  
 Boone's Lick Trail, 108  
 Boonville, battle of, 222  
 "Border Ruffians," 140  
 Border Troubles before Civil War, 138-140, 142  
 Border Warfare, 1861-1863, 229-230  
 Boundaries of Missouri, 68-69  
 Brackenridge, Henry M., 320  
 Brazito, battle of, 214  
 Breckenridge Democrats, 144-145  
 Bridger, Jim, 101  
 British attack on St. Louis, 48-50  
 Brookings, Robert S., 245  
 Brown, B. Gratz, 160-161, 171, 180, 182  
 Brown, John, 217  
 Bryan, W. J., 193, 198  
 Buckner, Alexander, 123  
 Buel, James T., 228  
 Buel, James W., 322-323  
 Byars, W. V., 322-323  
 Caffee, W. E., 233  
 Cahokia, settlement at, 38  
 California Trail, 109  
 Camp Jackson, 154  
 Campbell, John P., 312  
 Cape Girardeau, 44, 66  
 Capitals of Missouri, 63, 74  
 Capitols of Missouri, 117-118  
 Carondelet, 42  
 Carthage, battle of, 224  
 Carts, early French, 55  
 Catholics in pioneer Missouri, 55-56  
 Cement. *See* Mining

- Centennial celebrations in Mo., 207  
 "Central Clique," 126  
 Central College, Fayette, 334  
 Centralia Massacre, 230  
 Central Wesleyan College, Warrenton, 334  
 Charless, Joseph, 87, 315  
 Chopin, Mrs. Kate, 322-323  
 Chouteau, Auguste, 40-41, 95  
 Chouteau, Francois, 307  
 Chouteau, Madame, 41-42  
 Churchill, Winston, 315, 323-324  
 Cities in Missouri, 303-314  
 Civil War, 219-232  
 Civil War politics, 147-164  
 Clark, Champ, 199  
 Clark, George Rogers, 143  
 Clark, Harvey C., 236  
 Clark, John B., Jr., 156  
 Clark, William, 20, 66, 81-82, 119-120  
 Clay, Henry, 74  
 Clay products. *See* Mining  
 Clemens, Samuel L., 321-322  
 Clothes of pioneer French and Americans, 56  
 Coal. *See* Mining  
 Cockrell, Francis M., 184  
 Coins in pioneer Missouri, 84-85  
 Colby, Bainbridge, 246  
 Colleges, 332, 334  
 "College Union," 334  
 Colony for feeble minded, 193  
 Common field and commons, 51  
 Compromise, Missouri, 68  
 Confederates in Missouri, 219-232  
 Confederate Soldiers home, 193  
 Congress, act of, 1803, 63; 1804, 63-64; 1805, 64-65; 1812, 66-67; 1816, 67; 1820, 68; 1821, 70, 74-75  
 Conservative Union party, 169-170  
 Constitution of 1820, 70-72; 1845, 129-131; 1865, 164-168; 1875, 185-186  
 Constitutional convention, 1861, 150-152, 156-160; 1922, 206. *See also* Constitution  
 Constitutional Union party, 143-145  
 Conventions. *See* Constitution, Railroads, Politics  
 Cook, John D., 72  
 Coontz, Robert E., 245  
 Cooper, Benjamin, 80  
 Copper. *See* Mining  
 Corby, Joseph A., 233  
 Corn. *See* Agriculture  
 Coronado, 29  
 CORRESPONDENT AND RECORD, 316  
 Council of Defence, 24  
 Counties, 66, 253-254  
 Creel, George, 245  
 Crittenden, Thomas T., 188-189  
 Crosby, Oscar T., 246  
 Crossley, Wallace, 242  
 Crow, Wayman, 334  
 Crowder, E. H., 244  
 Croy, Homer, 324  
 Curtis, General, 226, 231  
 Davis, J. Lionberger, 246  
 Davison, G. C., 245  
 De Bourgmont, 34-35  
 De Lausus, 59  
 Delawares, 19, 81  
 Delegates to Missouri's const. conv., 1820, 72  
 Democratic party. *See* Politics  
 Depression of 1819, 84; 1837, 120; '70s, 183-184; '90s, 191; 1920-1921, 205  
 De Soto, 29  
 District of Louisiana, 64  
 Dockery, A. M., 194, 245  
 Dodge, Henry, 72, 81, 209  
 Dodge, Louis, 324  
 Doniphan, A. W., 131, 213-216  
 Doniphan's Expedition, 212-216  
 Douglass Democrats, 144-145  
 Drake, Charles D., 166, 180  
 Dress in pioneer days, 56  
 Drury College, Springfield, 334  
 Duden's book, 24  
 Dunklin, Daniel, 116, 119-120  
 Du Tisne, 33-34  
 Earthquake of 1811, 79-80  
 Eastin, Rufus, 67  
 Education, in pioneer Missouri, 56, 90-92; a century of, 326-336  
 Edwards, John C., 123, 129-131  
 Edwards, John N., 315, 319, 322  
 Eighty-ninth Division, 239-240  
 Election, first State, 1820, 72. *See also* Politics.  
 Ellis, J. Breckenridge, 324  
 Emancipation, 160-164, 166  
 Emigrant Aid Societies, 216-217  
 Enabling Act of 1820, 68

- Ewing, H. S., 231  
 Ewing, Thomas, 229-230  
 Exploration of the West, 35-36, 94-111  
 Explorers, 27-36  
 Farmer, Early American and French, 51-54  
 Farmington, 45  
 Farm machinery and farms. *See* Agriculture  
 Farmers' Alliance party, 183-184  
 "Fathers of the State," 70-72  
 Federal Farm Loan bank, 305  
 Federal Reserve banks, 305  
 Federals in Missouri, 231-232  
 Federal soldiers home, 193  
 Field, Eugene, 315, 321-322  
 Findlay, Jonathan S., 72  
 First settlements in Missouri, 32, 34, 38-46  
 Fitzsimmons, W. T., 240  
 Flatboats, 88  
 Fletcher, Thomas C., 164-170  
 Florissant, 43  
 Florida War, 209-210  
 Folk, Joseph W., 196-197  
 Foreign born in Missouri, 26, 260-263  
 Forts, Chartres, 40; Carondelet, 95; Orleans, 34, 38  
 Foxes, 19-20. *See also* Sacs and Foxes  
 Francis, David R., 191-192, 245  
 Franklin, town of, 78, 104  
 Fredericktown, 45  
 Free negroes, 74  
 Free silver campaign, 187, 193  
 Fremont, John C., 110, 162, 226  
 French explorers, 21-23, 27-36  
 French settlements, 38-46  
 Fruit experiment station, 193  
 Fur-trade attracted French, 28; extent of, 95, 99-104; of St. Louis, 305  
 Gamble, Hamilton R., 151, 157-161  
 Gambling in pioneer days, 61, 90  
 Gardner, Frederick D., 201-203, 241  
 Garrett, Ruby D., 238  
 Gehrung, Julien A., 245  
 General Assembly, first state, 72-74. *See also* Politics  
 Gentry, Richard, 120, 209-210  
 Gentry, William, 183  
 Geography of Missouri, 16-18  
 Geological survey, 293  
 Germans in Missouri 24, 127-128, 150-152. *See also* Population  
 Geyer Act of 1839, 329  
 Geyer, Henry S., 136  
 Glasgow, captured, 231  
 Government in Missouri, under Spanish, 47-57; 1804-1821, 62-75. *See also* Politics  
 Governors of Missouri. *See* Government in Missouri  
 Grange or People's party, 175, 183  
 Gratiot, Charles, 60  
 Great American Desert, 98  
 Great Salt Lake Trail, 109  
 Greeley, Horace, 182  
 Green, Duff, 72  
 Green, James S., 133, 141, 152  
 Greenback party, 175  
 Gregg, Josiah, 107  
 Gross, G. P., 233  
 Hadley, Herbert S., 197-198  
 Hall, Willard P., 133, 157, 161, 213  
 Hannibal and St. Joseph railroad. *See* Transportation  
 Hardeman, Fletcher, 234  
 Hardin, Charles H., 183-186  
 "Hards," 116, 128  
 Harris, W. T., 322-323  
 Harvey, Ford T., 246  
 Hayes, Upton, 228  
 Hempstead, Edward, 67  
 Henderson, John B., 151, 160-161  
 Henry, Andrew, 101  
 Holden, Hale, 246  
 Holden, James F., 246  
 Holliday, Benjamin, 316  
 Home for feeble minded, 331  
 Home Guards. *See* "Wide-Awakes"  
 Honey War, 212  
 Hoover food pledge, 241-242  
 Horses. *See* Agriculture  
 Houck, Louis, 324  
 Houses, American and French, 53-54  
 Houston, David E., 245  
 Howard, Benjamin, 65  
 Howard county, 78  
 Howard Payne seminary, 332  
 Hughes, Colonel, 228  
 Hughes, Rupert, 324  
 Hurst, Fannie, 315, 324

- Hunter, General, 226  
 Hunter, John, 246  
 Hunting in pioneer Missouri, 54  
 Hyde, Arthur M., 205-207  
 Hyde, William, 315  
 Illinois country, 38, 42-44  
 Illinois-French, 38, 42-44  
 Immigration to Missouri. *See* French, Americans, Germans, etc., and Population  
 Independence, and Santa Fe trade, 104, 106; Oregon Trail, 109; battle of, 228  
 Indiana territory, 64  
 Indians in Missouri, 19-21; troubles in 1812, 80-82  
 Industrial school for girls, 190; for negro girls, 198  
 Initiative and referendum, 197  
 Interstate migration, 263-264  
 Iowa-Missouri boundary dispute, 131; 212  
 Iowas, 19  
 Irish in Missouri, 25, 128. *See* Population  
 Iron. *See* Mining  
 "Ironclad" oath, 166-168, 180  
 Jackson, Claiborne F., 134, 144, 149-156, 220-224  
 Jackson, Hancock, 141  
 "Jackson Resolutions," 134  
 "Jawhawkers," 142, 217  
 Jefferson City, 117  
 JEFFERSONIAN, 316  
 Johnson, Benjamin, 327  
 Johnson, Waldo P., 152, 158  
 Joliet, 31  
 Jones, John Rice, 72  
 Joplin, 313  
 Journalism in Missouri, 315-319  
 Kansas Border troubles, 138-140, 142, 216-217  
 Kansas City, 35, 104, 106, 306-310  
 Kansas Indians, 19  
 Kansas-Nebraska bill, 137  
 Kaskaskia, 38  
 Kearney, Stephen W., 213  
 Keel boats, 88  
 Keithley, Ferdinando, 234  
 Kellogg, A. A., 245  
 Kemper academy, 332  
 King, Austin A., 132-133  
 Kirksville, battle of, 228  
 Knapp, George, 315  
 Kouns, Nathan C., 322-323  
 Krekel, Arnold, 166  
 Kroeger, Adolph Ernest, 322-323  
 Laclede, founder of St. Louis, 39-40  
 La Hontan, 32  
 Lamm, Henry, 202  
 La Motte, 283  
 Land, prices of, etc., 43-44, 84. *See also* Agriculture  
 Land office law, 1821, 118  
 Lane, Jim, 229  
 La Salle, 31-32  
 Lawrence, Kan., 229  
 Lawyers in pioneer Missouri, 86  
 Lead, attracted French, 28, 32-33; early mines, 32-33, 54-55; bring settlers, 38, 43. *See also* Mining  
 Legislature, first state, 1820, 72-74. *See also* Politics  
 Lewis, Meriweather, 65  
 Lewis and Clark expedition, 33, 96  
 Lexington, and Santa Fe trade, 104; battle of, 225-226  
 Liberal Republicans, 171-172, 174-182  
 Liberty, arsenal at, 153  
 Liberty Loans, 241  
 Life of the people, 1770-1804, 50-56; 1804-1821, 77-93  
 Lincoln, Abraham, 143, 153, 162  
 Lincoln Institute (now University), 173, 334  
 Lindenwood seminary, 332  
 Linn, Lewis F., 110, 123-124  
 Lisa, Manuel, 23, 95-96, 100-101  
 Literature, 319-325  
 Little Prairie, 44  
 Lone Jack, battle of, 228  
 Long, Breckenridge, 245  
 Long, Stephen H., 98  
 Louisiana country, 36, 46  
 Louisiana Fur Company, 39  
 Louisiana Purchase, 58-61  
 Louisiana Purchase Exposition, 192, 194, 306  
 Lumber, 15  
 Lyon, Harris Merton, 324  
 Lyon, Nathaniel, 153-155, 220-225  
 McClurg, Joseph W., 170-171  
 McCoy, J. C., 307  
 McCullagh, Joseph B., 315, 319



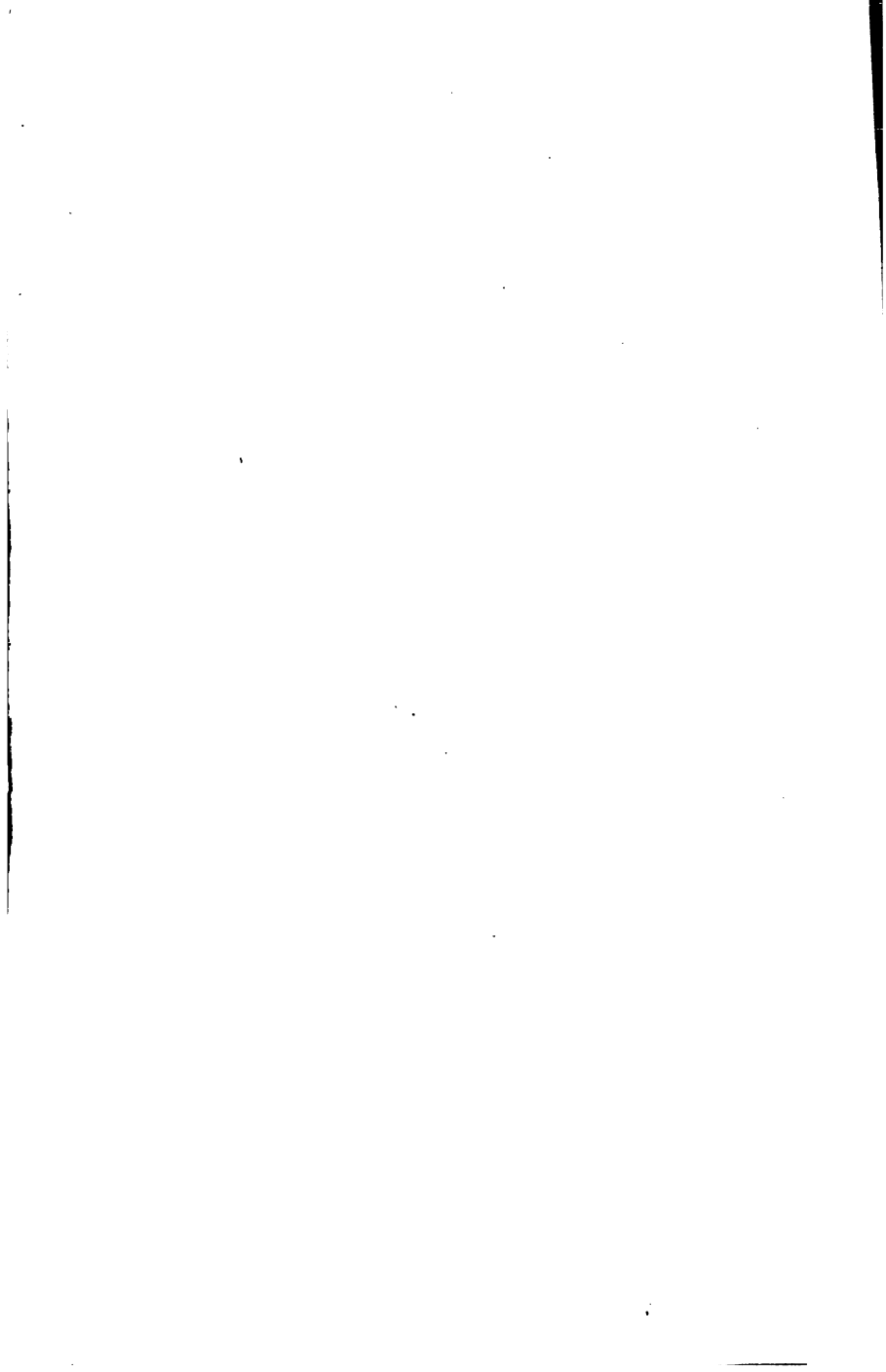
- McCulloch, General, 224-225  
 McKinley, J. C., 199  
 McNair, Alexander, 72, 116-118  
 McNeil, John H., 228  
 Major, Elliott W., 199-200  
 Mallet brothers, 36  
 Mansion house hotel, 70  
 Marmaduke, John S., 189-190, 230  
 Marmaduke, M. M., 117  
 Marquette, 31  
 Maxent, 39  
 Merchants in pioneer Mo., 55  
 Methodists in pioneer Mo., 92  
 Mexican Border Trouble, 235-236  
 Mexican War, 212-216  
 Miamis in War of 1812, 80-81  
 Middleton, J. A., 246  
 Migration. *See* Population  
 Mileage of railroads. *See* Transportation  
 Militia law, 118  
 Military orders of Federals, 227-228  
 Miller, Henry, 246  
 Miller, John, 116-119, 122  
 Military Missouri, 208-247  
 Mineral wealth of Missouri, 13-14  
 Mining in Missouri, 283-293  
 Mississippi river, 9. *See also* Transportation  
 Mississippi valley, 9-12  
 Missouri, the center state, 9-18; location of, 10-11; gateway to the West, 11-12; natural wealth of, 12-16; name, 17; people of, 19-26; Indians in, 19-21; French in, 21-23; Spanish in, 23; Americans in, 23-26; Germans in, 25; foreigners in, 26; negroes in, 26; explorers of, 27-36; early trade in, 30-36; early lead mining in, 32-33; first century of settlement in, 1700-1804, 38-46; government of Spanish in, 47-57; population of, 1795-1810, 44-45; capitals of, 63; boundaries of, 68; first five districts of, 64, 66; struggle for statehood of, 62-75; first state constitution of, 70-72; first state election in, 72; state government in, 1820, 72-74; boundaries of, 68-69; population of, 1820, 74; admission of, 75; government in, 1804-1821, 62-75; special legislature of, 1821, 75; counties of, 1812-1821, 78; forts in, War of 1812, 80-81; pioneer life in, 1804-1821, 82-92; politics in, 1820-1844, 112-125; the "Bullion State." 116; governors of, 1820-1844, 116-121; land office law of, 1821, 118; state bank of, 120; troubles with Mormons, 120-121; politics in, 1844-1860, 126-145; immigration to, 1844-1860, 127-128; constitution of, 1845, 129, 131; boundary dispute of, with Iowa, 131; in War with Mexico, 131; attitude on Kansas-Nebraska bill, 139-140; for compromise, 1860, 149-150; public opinion in, 1860-1861, 149-152; state convention in, 186., 150-152, 156-160; provisional government of, 156-161; constitutional convention of, 1865, 164-168; emancipation of slaves by, 166; state debt of, 173; constitution of, 1875, 185-186; constitutional convention of, 1922, 206; population of, 249-265; counties of, 253-254; agriculture in, 272-282; mining in, 283-293; transportation in, 294-302; cities in, 303-314; journalism and literature in, 315-325; education in, 326-336  
 Missouri Compromise, first, 68; second, 74-75  
 Missouri Council of Defence, 241  
 Missouri Enabling Act, 68-70  
 Missouri Fur Company, 100-101  
 MISSOURI GAZETTE, 87, 315-317  
 MISSOURI HERALD, 316  
 MISSOURI INTELLIGENCER, 87, 315-316  
 Missouri Military history, 247  
 Missouri Military academy, 332  
 Missouri Press Association, 318  
 MISSOURI REPUBLICAN, 315-316, 319  
 Missouri river, 12, 17, 33-36  
 Missouri School of Journalism, 319  
 Missouri State Guard, 156  
 Missouri State Militia, 227-228  
 Missouri Trading Company, 95, 100  
 Missouri Valley College, Marshall, 334  
 Missouri Wesleyan College, Cameron, 334  
 Missouri and the Oregon Trail, 108-110

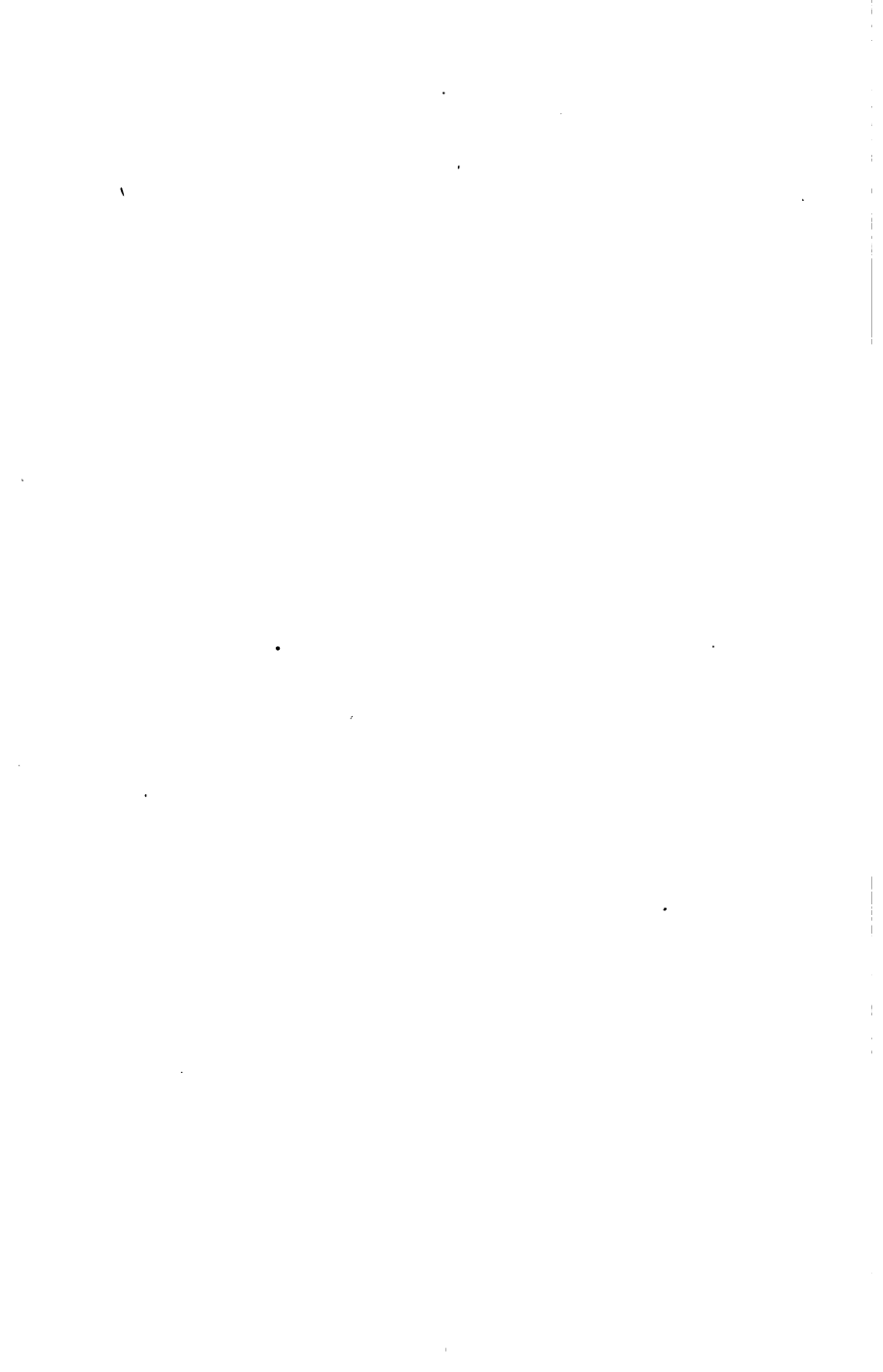
- Missouri and the Santa Fe trade, 104-108  
 Missouri and the West, 266-271  
 MISSOURIAN, The, at St. Charles, 316  
 Missourians, 19-26; the trail-makers of the West, 94-111; in the World War, 237-246  
 Missouri, 16-17, 19, 30  
 Money, 1804-1820, 84; effect of Santa Fe trade on, 108  
 Monroe, James, 75  
 Montgomery, James, 217  
 Moore, Milton, 233  
 Moorehouse, Albert P., 190  
 Mormons, trouble with, 120-121; War with, 210-211  
 Mormon Trail, 109  
 Mules, effect of Santa Fe trade on, 107. *See also* Agriculture  
 Mulligan, Col., 225-226  
 Mumford, F. B., 241  
 Murphy's Settlement, 45  
 Muster Day, 118-119  
 Native population of Missouri, 260-263  
 Natural resources of Missouri, 32-33  
 Negroes in Missouri, 26, 33, 259  
 Nelson, William R., 315, 319  
 Neosho legislature, 155-156  
 New Bourbon, 43  
 New England and Kansas, 139-140  
 New Madrid, founding of, 44  
 New Madrid claims, 79  
 New Madrid county, 66, 78-80  
 New Mexico, trade with, 95, 104-108  
 Newspapers in pioneer Mo., 87. *See also* Journalism  
 Nickel. *See* Mining  
 Nicollet, 30  
 Normal schools, 173, 181, 197  
 Northwest Ordinance, 43  
 Norton, Albert D., 199  
 Oaths of loyalty, etc., 158, 159, 167  
 Oats. *See* Agriculture  
 "Old Bullion." *See* Benton  
 Order Number Eleven, 229-230  
 Oregon, emigration to, 108-110; work of Linn for, 123-124; occupation of, 129  
 Oregon Trail, 108-110  
 Orr, Sample, 144  
 Osages, 19-20, 48  
 Osceola, burning of, 229  
 Otoes, 19-20  
 "Ousting Ordinance," 168  
 Owen, Mary Alicia, 324  
 OZARK STANDARD, 316  
 Pacific railroad. *See* Transportation  
 Palmer, L. C., 244  
 Palmyra Massacre, 230  
 Panic. *See* Depressions  
 Park College, Parkville, 334  
 Parker, Alton B., 196  
 Paschal, Nathaniel, 315  
 Patten, Nathaniel, 316  
 Pea Ridge, battle of, 227  
 Pension for the blind, 205  
 People's party, 183-184, 193  
 Pershing, John J., 235, 242-244  
 Petition for statehood, 1817, 67; 1818, 67  
 Peyton, R. L. Y., 156  
 Phelps, John S., 133, 186-187  
 Pike, Zebulon M., 98  
 Pioneer life in Missouri, 50-56, 82-92  
 Planters hotel conference, 155  
 Platte Purchase, 17, 20, 68, 119-120, 123-124  
 Pleasanton, General, 231  
 Poindexter, Col., 230  
 Politics in Missouri, 1820-1922, 112-207  
 Polk, Trusten, 141, 158  
 Population of Missouri, 44, 45, 65, 74, 77-78, 249-265  
 Populist party, 175  
 Porter, Joseph C., 228  
 Potosi, 42  
 Poultry experiment station, 198  
 Powersite, dam at, 14  
 Pratte, Chouteau and Co., 104  
 Presbyterians in early Missouri, 92  
 Price, Sterling, 137-140, 151, 155-156, 213-214, 220-231  
 Price's raid, 1864, 230-231  
 Prices of farm products, etc. *See* Agriculture  
 Progressive party, 199  
 Prohibition, 203, 205  
 Protestants in pioneer Missouri, 55-56  
 Provisional government of Missouri. 1861-1864, 156-161  
 Public opinion in Missouri, 1860-1861, 144-145, 149-156

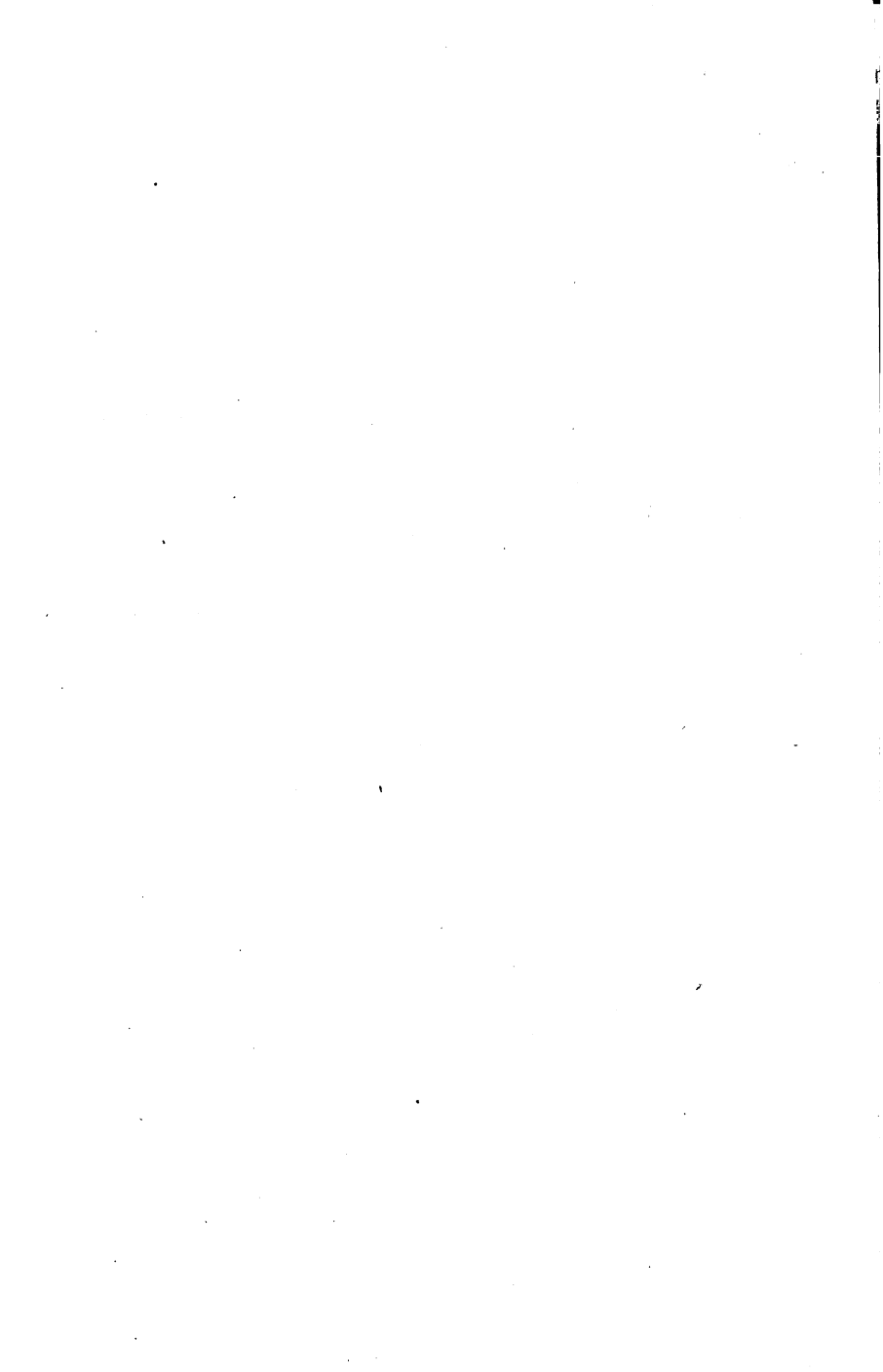
- Public School System, 1839, 126. *See also* Education
- Public service commission, 201, 300
- Pulitzer, Joseph, 315, 319
- Quantrell, 229, 231
- Queen of the Ozarks, 312-313
- Radical Republican party, 164-173
- Radiason and Groseilliers, 31
- Railroads, 120, 133, 296-301
- Rains, General, 224
- Ralls county, 74
- Ralls, Daniel, 72
- "Red Legs," 229
- Reed, James A., 199
- Reedy, William Marion, 315, 324
- Registry acts, 169-170
- Religion in early days, 55-56, 90-92
- Renault, brings first slaves, 33, 283
- Republican party, 178, 137, 143-145.  
*See also* Liberal Republicans
- Revolutionary War, 43
- Reynolds, Thomas, 116, 121
- Reynolds, T. C., 151, 156
- Rigauche, Mme., 327
- Rivers, 11-12
- Roads, 206, 301-302. *See also* Transportation
- Robidoux, Joseph, 310
- Rocky Mountain Fur Co., 101-103, 109
- Rolla, School of Mines at, 293
- Rollins, James S., 114, 132, 142
- Roosevelt, Theodore, 199
- Rule of the Radicals, 164-173
- Rumbold, Frank M., 233
- Rural Missouri. *See* Population
- Russell, Edgar, 245
- Sacramento, battle of, 215
- Sacred Heart Academy, 332
- Sacs and Foxes, 19-20, 35, 48, 80, 82, 119-120, 208-209
- St. Charles, 43, 74
- St. Charles county, 66
- St. Genevieve, 32, 38-39, 42, 55
- St. Genevieve county, 66
- St. Joseph, Michigan, 50
- St. Joseph, Missouri, 310-312
- St. Louis, 32, 38-42, 48-50, 104, 107, 153-154, 304-306, 315-317, 328
- St. Louis college, 92
- St. Louis county, 66
- St. Louis ENQUIRER, 70, 87, 315
- St. Louis HERALD, 316
- St. Louis REPUBLIC, 315
- St. Louis University, 333
- St. Michael's settlement, 45
- Salt, 28, 32, 38
- Salt river country, 78
- Santa Fe Trail and trade, 27, 35-36, 94-95, 104-108, 308
- Scenery, 15-16
- Schofield, General, 228
- School for blind, 133, 331
- Schools for incorrigible boys and girls, 331
- School for deaf, 133, 331
- School of mines, 293, 335
- Schools. *See* Education
- Schurz, Carl, 171, 182, 315
- Scott, John, 67, 72, 74-75, 122
- Secession legislature, 1861, 155-156
- Seminaries, 331-332
- Seminole Indian War, 120, 209-210
- Settlements in pioneer Missouri, 33, 38-46, 78-79
- Settlers of Missouri, 23-26, 77-78
- Shawnees, 19
- Shelby, Joseph, 161, 230
- Sigel, General, 224
- Silver. *See* Money
- Slavery, extension of, 126-127, 137; in Missouri, 33, 83, 161-164
- Smith, Jedediah S., 101, 103
- Smith, T. S. M., 245
- Snider, B. J., 322-323
- Social life in pioneer Missouri, 90-92
- "Softs," 116, 128
- Soil, 13
- Soldiers bonus, 206, 247
- Soldiers' and sailors' employment agency, 246
- Soldiers' and sailors' memorial hall, 247
- Soldiers' settlement amendment, 205
- Solemn public act, 1821, 75
- Southwest Missouri, early settlement of, 78
- Spanish explorers, 23, 27-36
- Spanish land grants, 64
- Spanish Louisiana, 44-57
- Spanish settlements in New Mexico, 29-30
- Spanish-American War, 233-235
- Spanish-French period, 47-48, 50-56
- Spanish Trail, 109

- Speculation. *See* Booms  
 Spencer, Selden P., 203  
 Springfield, Mo., 78, 312-313  
 State aid to railroads. *See* Railroads  
 State bank, 116, 120  
 State fair, 193  
 State food administrator, 241  
 State guard, 156  
 State historical society, 194  
 State hospitals, 180, 190  
 State militia, bill of 1861, 154  
 State sanatorium, 197  
 State seal, 118  
 State Teachers' Association, 331  
 State teachers' colleges, 173, 181, 197, 334  
 Steamboat, 88, 294-296  
 Stephens, Lon V., 193-194  
 Stettinius, Edward R., 245  
 Stevens, Walter B., 315, 319, 324  
 Stewart, Robert M., 142  
 Stinson, Julia, 246  
 Stoddard, Amos, 59, 63  
 Stone, Wm. J., 192-193, 199, 202  
 Stone. *See* Mining  
 Street and road transportation, 301-302  
 Sublett, William L., 101  
 Taft, William H., 198-199  
 Tarkio College, Tarkio, 334  
 Taussig, J. H., 244  
 Taverns, 87  
 Teasdale, Sara, 315, 324  
 Territory of Louisiana, 65-66  
 Territory of Missouri, 66  
 Territory of Orleans, 64-65  
 Test oath, 159  
 Texas, 129  
 Thirty-fifth division, 238-239  
 Thomas, Augustus, 315, 323-324  
 Thompson, Jeff, 230  
 Tools on pioneer farm, 55  
 Towns, first in Missouri, 55  
 Trade in pioneer days, 30-36  
 Trails, 104-110  
 Training school for boys, 190  
 Transfer of upper Louisiana, 59-60  
 Transportation, 88, 294-302  
 Trudeau, John B., 319, 326  
 Twain, Mark, 315, 321-322  
 Umphrville, Angus, 320  
 Union army, 219-232  
 University of Missouri, 121, 334-335  
 Upper Louisiana, 59-60, 63  
 Urban Missouri. *See* Population  
 Van Horn, General, 227  
 Vest, George G., 187-188  
 Vial, 36  
 Vote cast for governors, 1870-1920, 178  
 Vrooman, Carl, 245  
 Wagon road, first in Missouri, 55  
 Warner, William, 192, 196-197  
 War of 1812, 80-82  
 Wars of Missouri, 208-247  
 Washington University, 334-335  
 Waterpower in Missouri, 16  
 Wentworth academy, 332  
 WESTERN JOURNAL, 315  
 Westminster College, Fulton, 334  
 Westport, 307; battle of, 231  
 Westport Landing, 104, 106, 307  
 Wheat. *See* Agriculture  
 Whig party. *See* Politics  
 White persons. *See* Population  
 "Wide-Awakes," 153, 155  
 Wilfley, X. P., 202  
 Wilkinson, James, 65  
 Willard, Arthur Lee, 234  
 William Jewell College, Liberty, 334  
 Williams, Abraham J., 116  
 Williams, Walter, 315  
 Wilson, Robert, 157  
 Wilson's Creek, battle of, 224-225  
 Woman Suffrage, 203  
 Woodson, Silas, 180-181  
 World War, 201-203, 237-248  
 Zinc. *See* Mining

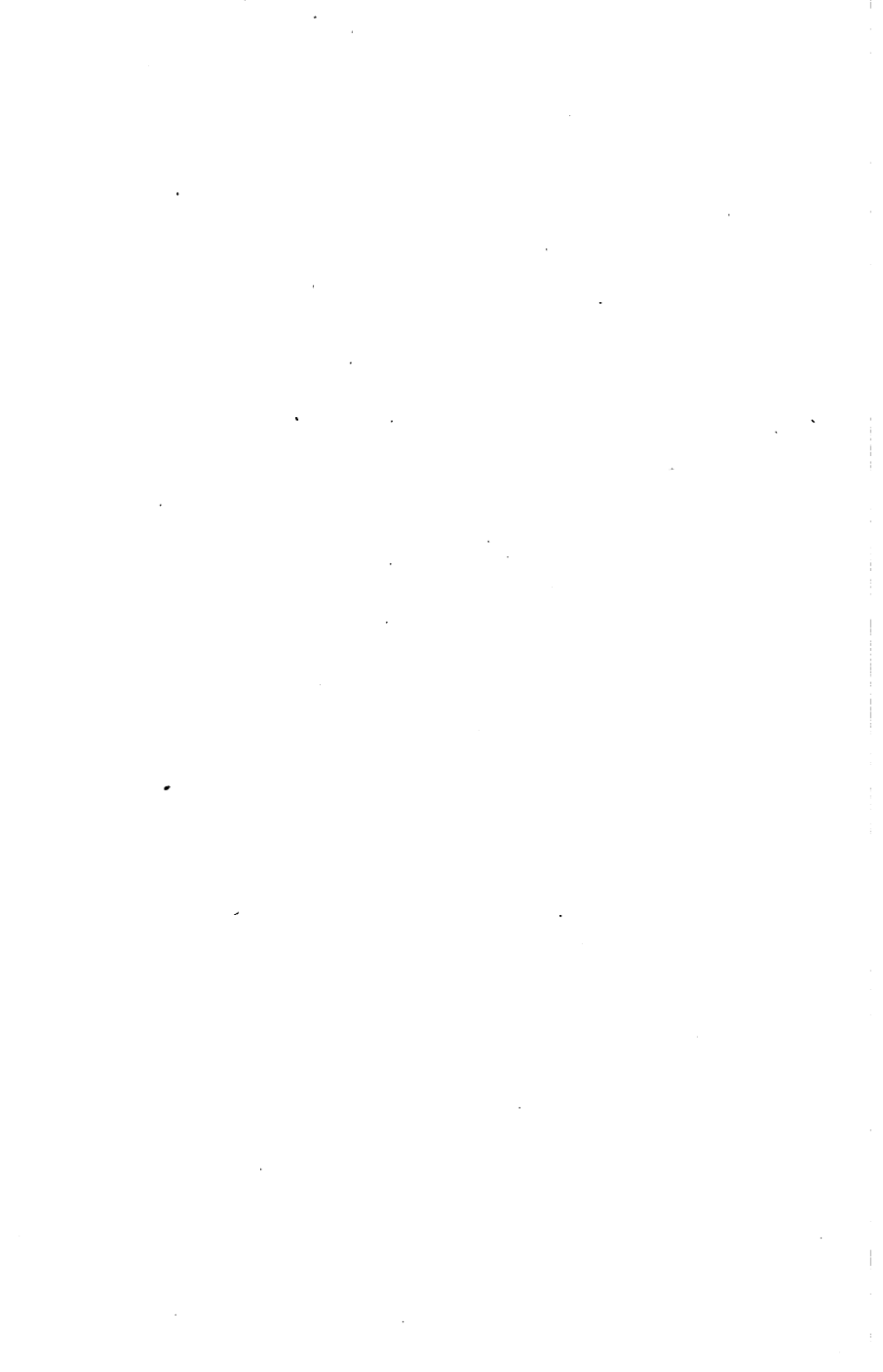
32  
02











SEP 18 1944

